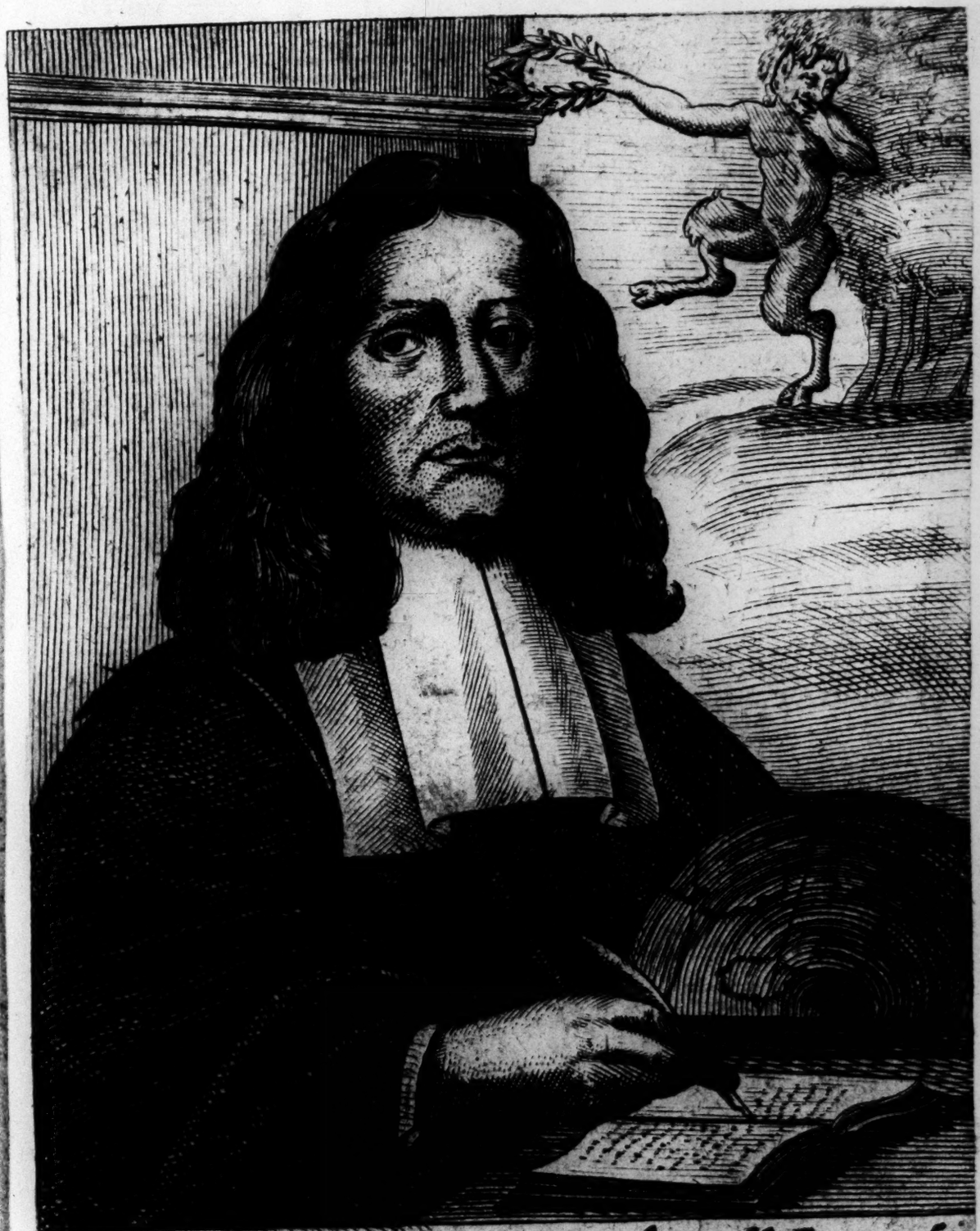


The Globe's thy Study e; for thy boundleſs mind:
In a leſs limit cannot be confind.
Gazing, I here admire: thy very Lookes
Show thou art read as well in men, as bookes.
He that ſhall ſcan thy face, may judge by it,
Thou haſt an Head peece that is throngd with wit

I. F





The English Padder or Hiway Robber. Portrayed.

THE English Rogue DESCRIBED, IN THE LIFE OF MERITON LATROON, A Witty Extravagant.

Being a compleat Hiſtory of the MOST Eminent Cheats OF BOTH SEXES.

Read, *but don't* Practice: *for the Author findes,*
They which live Honeſt *have moſt quiet mindes.*

Dixero ſi quid forte jocoſius hoc mihi juris
Cum & eniâ dabis ——— ———

London, Printed for *Henry Marſh*, at the Princes Arms in Chancery-Lane. 1665.

THE PREFACE.

Beloved Country-men,

HAd I not more respect to my Countries good in general, then any private interest of mine own, I should not have introduc'd my *Friend* upon the common Theatre of the World, to act the part of a *Rogue* in the Publick view of all. *Rogue!* did I call *him*? I should recal that word, since his Actions were attended more with Witty Conceits, then Life-

deſtroying Stratagems. It is confeſt, the whole bent of his mind tended to little elſe then *Exorbitancy*; and *Neceſſity* frequently compelled him to perpetrate *Villany*: And no wonder, ſince he lived in the infectious Air of the worſt of moſt *Licentious Times*. But ſtill I blame my ſelf for ſtigmatizing him with ſuch an *Opprobrious Title*, ſince in the declination of his days, the conſideration of his former *Wicked Courſes* hath wrought (I have ſo much charity for him to believe it) in him cordial contrition, and unfeigned repentance: and the truth of it is, Man ſhould be regarded not for what he *was*, but what he *is*.

Since his *Reformation*, I have taken very great delight in his Converſation, and never went from him but with great ſatisfaction in the *Ingenious Relation* of the tranſactions of his youthful days: And frequently revolving them

in

in my mind, Reaſon ſuggeſted to me, the *Hiſtory of his Life* could not but be as profitable as pleaſant, if made *publick*. For herein you may ſee Vice pourtrayed in her own proper ſhape, the uglineſs whereof (her *Vizard-Mask* being remov'd) cannot but cauſe in her (*quondam*) Adorers, a *loathing*, in ſtead of *loving*. Wherefore, with my *Friends* free conſent, and being inſtigated thereunto by many *perſons* inferiour to few, either for *Birth*, *Education*, or *Natural Parts*, I attempted this *Eſſay*.

If any be ſo curious to know what the (*Actors* you have in the Title) *Authors* Name is, let me crave his pardon for his concealment, and anſwer him with *Plutarch* to an inquiſitive Fellow, *Quum vides velatam, quid inquiris in rem abſconditam?* It was therefore covered, becauſe he ſhould not know what was in it. It is

enough that the *Actor* hath ſhown himſelf willing to declare *freely*, and without *mincing* the *truth* of what he hath done, without *knowing* who writ it; if the *Contents* ſhall as well *pleaſe* as *admoniſh*, no matter what I'm call'd. But if you are ſo deſirous to know what the *Writer* is, I ſhall briefly inform your *curioſity*: But I doubt I have *undertaken* what I *cannot perform*; for if to know a mans ſelf be more then an *Herculean Labour*, then without doubt it is beyond the limits of my power to tell you what *I* am; neither can *any man* truly *know another*, unleſs he firſt *knows* himſelf.

For ſome few years, the World and *I* have had a great *falling out*; and though *I* have uſed all *probable* and *poſſible* means, we remain yet *unreconcil'd*.

My only comfort is, *I* have a ſmall treaſure in *Minerva's Tower*, by which I ſubſiſt; and by the benefit thereof,

can

can walk abroad, not without taking *Observation* both from what *I hear* and *see*; and returning home, *Tam Aulæ vanitatem, quam Fori ambitionem ridere mecum soleo.* I can with *Democritus*, laugh at the *Actions* of men, extracting *Wisdome* from their *Follies*, and afterwards *lash* them with a *Rod* of *Experience* made of their own *fond inconsiderateneß.*

As for my part, *I* am onely a *Wiseacre*, (a Retort once put upon *Ben Johnson*) for *I* have no *Acres of Land.* But therefore don't be so unadvised, (as too many are of late) to regard not so much the *worth* of the Work, as the *dignity* of the Person. *Qui similiter in legendos libros atq; in salutandos homines irruunt, non cogitantes quales, sed quibus vestibus induti sint.* They mind not so much *what*, as *who writ* it; not the Quality of the *Thing*, but the Quality of the *Author*, and a *Person of*

Honour (now adays) being ſet in the place of the *Writer*, makes the Book received with a general applauſe. Pardon as well my Satyrical as Cynical Humour. If any diſlike what I have writ, let them let it *alone*, or publiſh themſelves ſomething of a better *Compoſition*. I ſhall not value any ones Cenſure, for I have already *Antidoted* my ſelf againſt it, by my own *diſ-eſteem* I have hereof. I am ſo far from being *Opinionative*, that you cannot ſpeak worſe then what I judge of it.

Naſutus ſis uſq; licet, ſis deniq; Naſus,
Non potes in nugas dicere plura meas.

Bark, foul-mouth'd carping Momus, *if thou durſt:*
What I have writ is Bad; Now do thy worſt.

Thus

Thus you ſee, as I will not *arrogate*, ſo I ſhall not *derogate*: for as I am ſo many *Paraſanges* after ſuch a one, yet I may be an *Ace* above thee, if thou art too *Cenſorious*.

But ſome may ſay, That this is but *actum agere*, a Collection out of *Guzman*, *Buſcon*, or ſome others that have writ upon this ſubject; *Cramben bis coctam apponere*; and that I have onely *ſqueez'd* their *Juice*, (adding ſome Ingredients of mine own) and afterwards *diſtill'd* it in the *Lymbeck* of my own *Head*. *Non habes confitentem reum*, I ne'er *extracted* from them one *ſingle drop of Spirit*. As if we could not produce an *Engliſh Rogue* of our *own*, without being beholding to other *Nations* for him. I will not ſay that he durſt vye with either an *Italian*, *Spaniſh*, or *French Rogue*; but having been *ſteept* for ſome years in an *Iriſh Bogg*, that hath added ſo much to his *Rogue-*

ſhips perfection, that he out-did them all by out-doing one, and that was a *Scot*; *I* need not uſe the Epithite *Roguiſh*, ſince the very name proves it a *Tautologie*. If *I* have borrowed any thing, it was not from what paſt the *Preſs*; but what *I* have taken upon the *ſcore* in Diſcourſe, *&c.* *I* here repay with Uſury, but not in the ſame *Commodity*. *Etiamſi apparet unde ſumptum ſit, aliud tamen quam unde ſumptum ſit, apparet.* *I* have not done as the *Romans*, who robb'd the whole Univerſe to enrich their ill-ſited City; *Rome I* mean. *I* skimm'd not off the Cream of other mens Wits, nor Cropt the flowers in others gardens to garniſh my own *Plots*; neither have *I* Larded my Lean Fancy with the Fat of others *Ingenious Labours*; but from the dictation of my own *Genius*, *I* have expreſt *quicquid in buccam venerit*, what came next, without much premeditation

on

on or ſtudy. Gra-mercy *Sack*, if happily *I* have hit the mark.

I am no *Aquæ potor*, an implacable *Enemy to Small Beer*; all the *Purchaſes I* can boaſt of, lies in *Wine*, which is by *Moderns* highly eſteemed for improving good Wits; *infuſing* Elogies and *Hyperbolical Exornations*, forming ſuch hard words in the *Brain*, as ſhall, like *Aceſta's arrows*, catch fire as they flie. But *I* have *wandered* from that *common rode*, reſpecting more the *matter* then *words*. For my Stile is *plain* and *familiar*, rejecting bombaſt *Expreſſions*, thinking them moſt *happy* when moſt eaſily to be underſtood.

As for the *Matter* it ſelf, if it be faulty, or the *Method* rude and indigeſted, conſider, *Quod nihil perfectum vel ſingulari conſummatum induſtria*, No man can obſerve all things; neither is it to be imagined that all *Rogueries* can be perform'd by one man. Not but that

when

when you have read him, you will find him *Notorious* enough.

Some men are not content to *commit Villany* themſelves, and boaſt of it too, but they will rob others of that which they ſhould be *aſham'd* to own. In this there is little or no *Fiction*, I'll aſſure you;and there is no *Story* therein which doth not carry with it more then the bare *probability* of *truth*. Should I ſpeak much more,it is to be fear'd ſome will argue from hence, that I am conſcious to my ſelf of its various defects; and therefore I ſhall deſiſt from Apologizing for *it*, or my ſelf.

Senſible I am, that if ought be omitted or added, which the Reader likes or diſlikes, he will account me *Mancipium paucæ lectionis*, an Idiot, an inſipid Aſſe; *nullus ſum,vel Plagiarius*, a very Thief, and that I ſtole other mens Labours. Thus do I know I ſhall be vilified and undervalued even by ſuch,

that

that are so far from being capable of judging of *Ingenuity*, that they know not how to write Orthographically six words of sence in their own Mother-tongue. Yet I must confess, what is writ, is neither as I would, nor as it should, it being usher'd into the world as it was first written; whereas I should have done with this, as a *Physitian* advised should be done with *Lapis Lazuli*, to be washt fifty times before used: had not immergent Affairs hindred me, I would have lick'd this *Cub* into a more *comely Form*. But since 'tis otherwise, I shall onely complain with *Ovid*;

Cum relego scripsisse pudet, quia plurimo cerno,
Me quoq; quæ fuerant Judice digna lini.

All the favour that I shall desire, is, That the *Reader* would not account the

Prin-

Printers literal or verbal Eſcapes *mine*; and withal paſs a candid interpretation on each Line; and *I* ſhall endeavour in a ſhort time to become more ſatisfactory, and ſtudy how *I* may be always ſerviceable to my Country.

When I read o'er what I have writ, then ſhame
O'er ſpreads my face, becauſe it ſtabs my Name.

Meriton Latroon.

On

ON

The English Rogue.

WHat others writ, was ta'en upon the Score;
Thou art in Re, *what they but* feign'd *before.*
They did but lisp, *or worse, speak through the* Nose:
Thou hast pronounc't, and liv'st in Verse *and* Prose.
Guzman, Lazaro, Buscon, *and* Francion,
Till thou appear'dst did shine as at high Noon.
Thy Book's now extant; those that judge of Wit,
Say, They and Rablais *too fall short of it.*
How could't be otherwise, since 'twas thy fate,
To practise *what they did but* imitate.
We stand amaz'd at thy Ephesian Fire;
Such purchas'd Infamy *all must admire.*

N. D.

On

On the Enſuing Subject.

WHat! *more* Rogues *ſtill? I thought our happy Times*
Were freed from ſuch, as from Rebellious Crimes.
But ſuch will be: i' th' beſt of Times *we find*
The worſt of men; *the* Law *can't* lawleſs *bind.*
It muſt be ſo, ſince Nature thought it fit
To give ſome nought but Lands, *to others* Wit
But no Eſtates, *beſtowing ſuch a mind*
That can't within due limits *be confin'd.*
Hence Depredations, Thefts, *nay worſer facts,*
Cheating & Whoring, *with unheard-of acts:*
For Swimming *for their* Lives, *theſe* miſrules *think,*
'Tis better catch *at any thing, then* ſink.
Such was this Rogue, *eſteem'd the worſt of men;*
Liv'd by his Sword, *his* Pregnant Wit, *and* Pen.
In ſhort, Pray pardon if I ſpeak amiſs;
I never read ſo arch a Rogue *as* This.

A. B.

TO THE

READER,

In ſtead of the

ERRATA.

This Rogue *hath had his faults,*
the Printers too;
All men whilſt here do erre;
and ſo may you.

THE English Rogue,

Described in the Life of a Witty *EXTRAVAGANT.*

CHAP. I.

What his Parents were. The place of his own Nativity. His miraculous escape from the hands of Irish Rebels, his Brother being at that very time murdered by the mercileſs hands of thoſe bloody Butchers.



AFter a long and ſtrict inquiſition after my Fathers Pedegree, I could not finde any of his Anceſtors bearing a *Coat*; ſurely length of time had *worn* it out. But if the *Gentlemen Craft* will any ways ennoble his Family, I believe I could deduce ſeveral of his Name, Profeſſors of that *laſting Art*, even from *Criſpin*. My Fathers Father had

by his continual labour in Husbandry, arriv'd to the height of a *Farmer*, then the head of his Kindred: ſtanding upon one of his own Mole-Hills, Ambition ſo ſwell'd him, that he ſwore by his Plowſhare that his eldeſt *Son* (my *Father*) ſhould be a *Scholliard*; and ſhould learn ſo long, till he could read any printed or written hand; nay, and if occaſion ſhould ſerve, writ a Bill or a Bond.

It was never known that any of that *Family* could diſtinguiſh one letter from another, neither could they ſpeak above the reach of their Horſes underſtandings. Talk to them in any other *Dialect* but that of *a Bag-pudding of a Peck*, or *a Piece of Beef*, (in which their teath might ſtep wet-ſhod) and a man were as good to have diſcourſed with them in *Arabick*. But let me not abuſe them; for ſome underſtood ſomething elſe, that is to ſay, The Art of Whiſtling, *Driving* their Team, and to ſhooe themſelves as well as their Horſes, how to lean methodically upon a *Staff*, and through the holes of their *Hat*, tell what it is a Clock by the *Sun*.

The ſymmetrical proportion, ſweetneſs of features, and acuteneſs of my *Fathers* wit, were ſuch, (though extracted out of this lump of *red* and *white marle*) that he was belov'd of All. As the lovelineſs of his perſon gain'd alwayes an intreſt in *Female* hearts; ſo the quickneſs of apprehenſion and invention, and the acquired quaintneſs of his expreſſions, procur'd him the friendſhip of ſuch as converſ'd with him. A Gentleman at length, taking notice of more then ordinary natural parts in him, at his proper charge ſent him to the Univerſity: where in a ſhort time he became famous for *Vniverſal* Learning; and in proceſs of time, notorious for all ſorts of *Debauchery*.

The

The Gallants and Critical Wits of *Oxford*, coveted so much his Company, that he had not time to apply himself to his study; but giving way to their sollications, being prompted thereunto by his own powerful inclinations, plunged himself over head and ears in all manner of sensuality. For his leud carriage, inimitably wicked practises, and detestable behavior, he was at last expelled the Colledge.

Now was he forced to return to his Father, who with much joy received him, but would not tell him the true cause of his coming down; but to palliate his villainies, informed his Father, that he had learned as much as he could be instructed in; and now and then would sprinkle his Discourse with a *Greek* or *Latine* sentence, when talking with the poor ignorant old man; who took wonderful delight in the meer sound thereof. When my Father talkt at any time, they were all as silent as Midnight; and then would my Grand-father with much admiration becken to the standers by to give their greatest attention, to what the *Speaker* as little understood as his *Auditors*. In ostentation he was carried to the Parson of the Parish to discourse with him; who by good fortune understood no other Tongues, but what his Mother taught him: My Father perceiving that, made *Shouldramutton* and *Katathumpton* serve for very good *Greek*; which the Parson confirmed, telling my Grand-father further, That his Son was an excellent Scholar; protesting, that he was so deeply learned, that he spake things he understood not.

He had not been long in the Countrey, before a Gentlewoman taking notice of his external and internal Qualifications, fell deeply in love with him; and preferring her own pleasure before the displea-

ſure of her wealthy Relations, ſhe *incontinently* was married to him. Her Portion (though large) was ſoon expended, and then neceſſity called upon my Father to look out for ſome employment, conduceable to a future livelihood. After the fruſtration of various attempts, in fine concluded to undertake the Miniſterial Function: but the main obſtacle was, his fear he ſhould not practiſe what he preached; but having ſatiated himſelf with all manner of ſenſualities, he began to loath what formerly he loved, his hatred thereunto being aggravated by the evil effects, he experimented in ſuch licentious courſes.

His eminent parts natural, (and what he attained unto by his Countrey ſtudies, being aſhamed to have loſt ſo much time) introduced him as a Chaplain to a Nobleman, with whom he travelled into *Ireland*. Experience had then ſo reformed his life to ſo ſtrict a religious courſe, that his obſervers gained more by his example, then his hearers by precepts. Thus by his Piety in the Purity of his practice, he ſoon regained his loſt credit.

By this time my Mother drew near her time, having conceived me in *England*, but not *conceiving* ſhe ſhould thus *drop* me in an *Iriſh Bog*. It is ſtrange the Clymate ſhould have more prevalency over the nature of the Native, then the diſpoſition of the Parent. For though Father and Mother could neither flatter, deceive, revenge, equivocate, *&c.* yet the ſon (as the conſequence hath ſince made it appear) can (according to the common cuſtom of his Countreymen) diſſemble and ſooth up his Adverſary with expreſſions extracted from Celeſtial Manna, taking his advantage thereby to ruine him: For to ſpeak the truth, I could never yet love any but for ſome by-reſpect, neither could I ever be perſwaded

perſwaded into a pacification with that man who had any way injured me, never reſting ſatisfied till I had accompliſhed a plenary revenge, which I commonly effected under the pretence of great love and kindneſs. Cheat all I dealt withal, though the matter ever ſo inconſiderable. Lie ſo naturally, that a miracle may be as ſoon wrought, as a truth proceed from my mouth. And then for Equivocation, or mental Reſervations, they were ever in me innate properties. It was always my diſpoſition rather to die by the hand of a Common Executioner, then want my revenge, though ever ſo ſlightly grounded. This is the nature of an Iriſhman; but I ſhall deſiſt here, to characterize him further, reſerving him for another place.

Four years after my birth, the Rebellion began, ſo unexpectedly, that we were forced to flee in the night; the light of our flaming Houſes, Recks of Hay, and Stacks of Corn, guided us out of the Town, and our fears ſoon conveyed us to the Mountains. But the Rebels wandring to and fro, intending either to meet with their friends, (who flocked from all parts to get into a body) or elſe any Engliſh, which they deſigned as Sacrifices to their implacable malice, or inbred antipathy to that Nation, met with my Mother, attended by two Scullogues, her menial ſervants, the one carrying me, the other my Brother. The Fates had decreed my Brothers untimely death, and therefore unavoidable, the *Faithful Infidel* being butchered with him. The ſurviving ſervant carried me, declaring, that he was a *Roman* Catholick, and imploring their mercy with his howling *Chram a chrees*, and *St. Patrick a gra*, procured my Mothers, his own, and my ſafety.

Thus was I preſerved, but I hope not reſerved as a ſubject for Divine Vengeance to work on. Had I then died, no other guilt could have rendred me culpable before Gods Tribunal, but what was derivative from *Adam*. But ſince the concatenation of ſins various links hath encompaſſed the whole ſeries of my life. Now to the intent I may deter others from perpetrating the like, and receive to my ſelf abſolution (according as it is promiſed) upon unfeigned Repentance, and ingenious Confeſſion of my nefarious facts, I ſhall give the Reader a Summary Relation of my life, from my nonage to the Meridian of my days, hoping that my extravagancies and youthful exiliencies have in that ſtate of life their declination and kinde.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

What Waggeries he committed, being but a Childe.

BEing about five years of age, Report rendred me a very beautiful Childe, being enricht with all the good properties of an handſome face, had not pride in that my tender age deprived me of its grace or chiefeſt ornament. Thus it hapned, My Father kept commonly many Turkeys, one among the reſt could not endure the ſight of a Red Coat, which I uſually wore: But that which moſt of all exaſperated my budding paſſion, was, his aſſaulting my Bread and Butter, and inſtead thereof, ſometimes my hands; which cauſed my bloomy Revenge to uſe this ſtratagem. I inticed him with what I had in my hand to the Orchard-gate, which was made to ſhut with a Pulley; he reaching in his head after me, I immediately clapt faſt the Gate, and ſo ſurprized my mortal Foe. Then did I uſe that little ſtrength I had to beat his brains out with my Carſtick; which being done, I deplumed his tail, ſticking thoſe Feathers in my Bonnet, as the inſulting Trophies of my firſt and lateſt conqueſt. Such then was my pride, as I nothing but gazed up at them; which ſo tryed the weakneſs of my eyes, and ſo ſtrained the Optick Nerves, that my eyes ran a tilt at one another, as if they contended to ſhare with me in my victory. This accident was no ſmall trouble to my Mother, that ſo doted on me, that I

have often heard her ſay, *She forgot to eat (when I ſate at Table) for admiring the ſweetneſs of my complexion.*

This proved no laſting damage to my beauteous countenance: for though for the preſent it eclipſed the glory of my face, yet time reduced my eyes to their proper ſtation; ſo that within ſix years the obliquity of my eyes aſpects were hardly diſcernable. Nay, I have heard ſome ſay, that this caſt of my eyes was ſo far from being a detriment, that it became my ornament. Experience confirm'd me in this belief; for they proved as powerful, as the perſwaſive arguments of my deluding tongue; both which conjoyned, were ſufficient (I ſpeak it not vain-gloriouſly) to prevail even over the *Goddeſs of Chaſtity*; eſpecially being backt on with ardent deſires, and an undaunted reſolution. But to my purpoſe: Being driven out of *Ireland*, there being at that time no place of ſafety in that Kingdom, my Mother taking me with her, (being compelled to leave my Father behind, barbarouſly murdered by the Rebels for being a Proteſtant Preacher) ſhe adventured to Sea, not caring whither ſhe went. Foulneſs of weather drove us upon the Coaſt of *France*, where we were forced to land, to repair what damage the Ship had ſuſtained in ſtreſs of weather. From *France* we ſet ſayl, and landed in the Weſt of *England*. Here we were joyfully received, and well entertained by ſome of my Mothers kindred at firſt: but lying upon them, they at length grew weary; ſo that they were forced to go from thence to ſome other place: where-ever he came, we found ſtill ſome or other that gave us entertainment for thoſe good parts they found in my Mother, ſhe being very well read both in Divinity and Hiſtory, and having

ving an eloquent tongue, ſhe commonly apply'd her ſelf to the Miniſter of the Town; who wondring to ſee ſo much learning and perfection in a Woman, either took us into his own houſe for a while, or gathered ſome contributions to ſupply our preſent neceſsities; with which we travelled to the next Town: and in this manner we ſtrouled or wandred up and down, being little better then mendicant Itinerants. Staying ſo little time in a place, and my Mother being more careful to get a ſubſiſtence, then to ſeaſon my tender years with the knowledg of Letters, I was ten years old before I could read. Being aſham'd to go to School in this ignorance, I apply'd my ſelf to my Mother, who taught me to apprehend the Alphabet in leſs hours then there are letters; ſo that in a ſhort time, I could read diſtinctly, and immediately introduc'd into the Grammar-School; where I had not been long, before I became a Book-worm, ſecuring as many as lay in my way, if convenient privacy ſerv'd. And to the intent that my Theſts might paſs undiſcovered, before I would vend what Books I had ſtollen, I uſually metamorphized them: if new, I would gaſh their skin; and if the leaves were red, I would make them look pale for the wounds they received: if much uſed, tear out all the remarks, and paint their old faces. This courſe I followed a long time undiſcovered, which coſt many a Boy a Whipping at home by their Parents, as well as Maſter. I had various uſes for my money, (you muſt think) but principally to bribe ſome of the upper Form to make my Exerciſes: which were ſo well liked of by my Maſter, that I ſtill came off with applauſe; and in a ſhort time ſo advanced, that I was next to the higheſt Form, when I underſtood not the loweſt Author we read. I was

forced

forced to imploy my Wits in the management of my hands, to keep touch with my Penſioners, leſt they failing me for want of encouragement, my Maſter ſhould diſcover how much my Duncesſhip was abuſed. Frequent were my Truantings, which were always attended with ſome notorious Fact, beſides ſmall Faults, as robbing of Orchards, pulling the firſt and ſeconds of Forty or fifty Geeſe at a time, milking the Cows in my Hat, and ſo drink the Milk: And then for Poultry, there was ſeldom a day eſcaped, wherein I had not more or leſs; which I carried to a houſe that encouraged me in my Roguery, participating of the cheer, and ſo feaſting me for my pains. If I had ſtoln any thing, I had me recourſe to them, who would give me two pence for what was worth a ſhilling, and render me good content. I knew my puniſhment for my rambling, and valued it not; therefore little hope of reformation from thence. Nay, for very ſmall faults I wiſht to be whipt, knowing the Rod would then be laid on gently; which carried with it a tickling pleaſure, ſtimulating Lechery. As for my Thefts and Rogueries abroad, I was careful they ſhould not be diſcovered. If any Boy had injuried me, whoſe ſtrength exceeded mine, ſo that I durſt not cope with him, I would exerciſe my revenge upon him privately, concealing the reſentment of the injury he did me. One common trick I had, was to ſtick a Pin on the board whereon he was to ſit: in this manner did I ſerve ſeveral: in which fact I was at laſt taken; the puniſhment my Maſter inflicted on me, was, To ſit by his Desk alone, and compoſe a Copy of Verſes: by which means he perceived how much I had abuſed my ſelf in the loſs of my time; for I knew not how many feet any Verſe required, and therefore

muſt needs be altogether ignorant of their compoſition. Whereupon he degraded me, and made me begin a new. The ſhame whereof, and reproach I daily received from my School-fellows, I could not bear; wherefore I prevailed on my Mothers indulgency, to let me regain what I had loſt at home, which ſhe conſented to. But perceiving my Lecherous inclinations, by my night-practiſes, with her Maid, reſolved to ſend me to a Boarding School; For our Family being but ſmall, I lay with the Maid: being ſo young, my Mother did not in the leaſt ſuſpect me; but my too forward Lechery would not lie quiet, putting her frequently to the ſqueek; in fine, I was ſent away a great diſtance to a very ſevere and rigid Maſter. Now was I kept cloſe to my book; and leſt my Wit ſhould be any ways dulled, my ſtomack was always kept ſharp; which quickned my invention, to ſupply what was deficient. There is no complaint ſo inſufferable as the grumbling of empty and diſſatisfied Guts. My greateſt care was to inſinuate my ſelf into the favor of the Servant Maids, knowing they loved to play at a *Small Game* rather then ſtick out, rather then not have their *itchings Gums rubb'd* at all, they would admit of a *Childes Corral* to execute the Office. I performed my buſineſs ſo well, that my ſtomack was always ſatiated when the reſt of the boarders were diſſatisfied; often going to bed in a manner ſupperleſs. Here I was deprived of my old pilfering way, becauſe I had no convenience for the diſpoſal of what I ſtole, it being but a very ſmall Village. My Mother moreover, fearing the extravagantneſs of my nature, allowed me nothing for expence, which made me deſperately reſolved. A River confined within ſome made *Bank*, deterring its natural courſe, will (when

that

that is overthrown, which impeded its progreſs) flow with the greater impetuoſity: Youth may for a while be circumſcribed as to its deſires; but if his inclination prompt him to the enjoyment of ſenſual delights, ſooner or latter he will taſte their reliſh, and better early then late. *B*efore the Noon of his days approach, Experience may reform his Life and Converſation: Though from the Dawning morning thereof, till the Meridian, his actions have been nothing elſe but the extract of all manner of Debauchery. *B*ut (it is commonly obſerved) that man which in the declination of his age, tracks the by-paths of Vice and Licentiouſneſs, ſeldom deſiſts till Death cuts off his paſſage; never leaving off doting on ſuch falſe and imaginary pleaſures, till the *Grim Pale faced Meſſenger* takes him napping. Thus much by way of Digreſſion.

Our Maſter was very ancient, however reſolved that his Age ſhould not hinder his Teaching: For if he found himſelf indiſpoſed, he would ſend for us all into his bed-chamber, inſtructing us there. One time above the reſt, a Gentleman had ſent his Son five pieces of Gold to give his Maſter for Dyet, *&c.* Our Maſter receiving them, called for a ſmall Cabinet that ſtood in the room, which I (more officious then the reſt) brought him. Having put in the Gold, he commanded me to carry it from whence I had it: Which I did; well conſidering the weight thereof, being, though ſmall, very heavy. The Devil preſently became my Tutor, ſuggeſting to my thoughts, various ways for the gaining this money. At laſt I reſolved to take the impreſſion of the Key in Wax; which with much difficulty I obtained, and carried it to a Smith four miles diſtant. The old

Fellow

Fellow (immediately upon my propoſal) ſuſpected me; (queſtionleſs he was acquainted with ſuch kinde of devices) and queſtioning me what I intended thereby, I was forced to betake my ſelf to my Legs for ſafety, not knowing what anſwer to make him. My firſt ſtratagem not ſuiting with my purpoſe, I tryed a Picklock of mine own invention; but that would not effect my deſign neither: So that I concluded to take Cabinet and all. *My Maſters* cuſtom was to walk abroad at nights, and ſleep in the daytime; inverting the courſe of Nature: Foreknowing his intention, I got into the Chamber, and concealed my ſelf under the bed. Finding my way clear, I conveyed my ſelf and purchaſe out of the Houſe, and travelled all night. In the morning I found my ſelf near a ſmall Town, about ſixteen miles diſtant from the place whence I came. Thinking my ſelf now ſecure, I thought it very requiſite here to repoſe my wearied Limbs, and ſolace my ſelf with the ſight of what I had gotten; but it was not long after that I was ſo laced for it, that comparatively to my puniſhment, *Bridewel* whipping is but a paſtime. I called for Sack, having never taſted any, and hearing much talk thereof; at which the people of the Houſe much admired, that ſo ſmall an Urchin as I ſhould call for ſuch coſtly Liquor. They viewed me very inevitively, but more eſpecially the Cabinet, which cauſed them to ſuſpect me. At length they began to ask me divers Queſtions, *Whence I came? whither I was going? What was contained within that Caſcanet?* and the like. Before I could give the reſolution of what they demanded, the *Heu and Cry* overtook me: Preſently I was laid hold on, and my treaſure taken from me: That which vext me as much as my Surprizal, was,

I had not time to try what kinde of taſte the Sack had. Various were the talk of the people, every one ſpending his verdict on me. *This is a prime young Rogue indeed to begin thus ſoon*, ſaid one, *could he have ſeen, when in his Mothers belly, ſurely he would have ſtoln ſomething thence.* Another ſaid, *Forward fruit was ſoon rotten; and ſince I began to ſteal whileſt a childe, I ſhould be hanged before I ſhould write Man.* Ready to die with fear, I was ſent back to the place whence I came, and from thence to the place of execution, had not the tenderneſs of my age, and fewneſs of years, procured pity from my injured Maſter. Confined I was within his houſe, lockt up cloſe priſoner in a Chamber, till that he could acquaint my Mother with what had paſt: in this time I was not debarred of my ſuſtenance, though my Commons were epitomized, but I was daily viſited by my Maſter, attended with a Cat of Nine-tails (as he called it) being ſo many ſmall cords, with which he fleyed my buttocks; and when he found me ſtubborn, or not penitent enough as he thought, after he had skinned my podix, he would waſh it with Vinegar, or Water and Salt. Within a week my Mother arrived, who hearing of my Rogueries, was ſo impatient, that ſhe would needs take me to task her ſelf; but when ſhe had unruſt me, and ſaw me in ſo woful a plight, my ſhirt being as ſtiff as *Buckram* with blood, and my tender breech, ploughed and harrowed, fell down as if ſhe had been about to expire; recovering, my Maſter endeavored to ſatisfie her, by telling her, that great offences, required great puniſhments; and the way to bend an Oak, is to do it whileſt it is young; alleadging many more arguments to that purpoſe, which had ſatisfied her well in his ſeverity, had not natural affection interpoſed.

What

What to do with me, she knew not; wherefore she consulted with my Master, who told her, *He durst not keep me longer, the Country people bringing in daily complaints against me.* And to aggravate my Mother the more, he briefly summ'd up my faults in this manner; having had justly various accusers, who drew up my Indictment.

Imprimis, That one of his Maids having crost me (to be reveng'd of her, knowing she was a drowsie wench, when asleep not easily wak'd) as she slept by the fire, I took my opportunity, and melted some glew, and taking up her coats, with a brush dipt in the glew, gently stroakt her---till that I had closed up: the Maid not presently waking, it had so cemented the part, that the collaterals were not easily to be disjoyned. The wench starting up to make water, found her self unable; she thought at first she had been bewitcht, till more plainly the cause of this stoppage did appear, was at last with great loss, pain and difficulty cured. That he going about to correct me for this obscene and mischievous fact, was by me shown a very *shittan trick*, which put him into a *stinking condition*; for having made my self laxative, on purpose squirted into his face upon the first lash given. That being upon a boys back, ready to be whipt, I had often bit holes in their ears. That another time surreverencing in a paper, and running to the window with it, which lookt out into the yard, my aged Mistress looking up to see who opened the Casement, I had lik'd to have thrown it into her mouth; however for a time deprived her of that little sight she had left. That another time I had watcht some lusty young Girles, that used in Summer-nights about twelve a clock, to wash themselves in a small brook near adjacent, and that I had

had concealed my self behind a Bush, and when they were stript, took away their cloaths, making them dance home after me stark naked, to the view of their sweet-hearts, whom I had planted in a place appointed for that purpose, having given them before notice of my design. A great many more such tricks he recounted, which he knew, but not the tenth of what he knew not. As for example, on *Christmas*-day, we had a pot of Plumb-broth, I askt the Maid to taste, to see how I liked them: *I that I should*, she said, (this was the Maid I had so served before with glew) and with that takes up a ladle full, and did bid me sup, she holding the ladle in her own hand, I imprudently opening my mouth somewhat larger then I should, she pours down the scalding Pottage through my throat: at present I could not tell the Jade (that laught till she held her sides) how I liked them; but I verily believed I had swallowed the *Gunpowder-Plot*, expecting every moment to be *blown up*. I took as little notice of this passage as possibly I could, resolving to retalliate her kindness. I observed the *Maid* to carry this Plumb-pottage-pot into the yard, and taking notice that the weight of the Jack was in the same yard wound up a great height under a great Pain-house, the Jack being down, I suddenly removed the weight, and fastned the Pot to the line, so going into the Kitching, wound it up to the top, and then stopt it, for the meat was taken up. The house was all in an uproar instantly about the Pot, every one admiring what should become of it: The *Maid* averred, that she see it even now, and none could remove it but the Devil. Others asserted (which were infected with *Puritanism*) that it was a Judgment shown for the superstitious observation of that Festival day;

day; but the next day, roasting Meat, this seeming Miracle vanished by the descending of the Pot fastened to the Jack-line. Another time my Master had reserved in his Garden some choice Aprecocks, not above an half-score, which he purposed for some friends that intended to visit him shortly: The daily sight of this delicate fruit, being forbidden, tempted me more strongly to attempt their Rape; but I made choice of an impropitious hour to accomplish my design in; for my Master lookt out of his window and saw me gather them, though he knew not absolutely whether it was I or no. Whereupon, he instantly summoned us together: being met, I quickly understood his intention, therefore I conveyed the Aprecocks into the next boys Pocket; I had no sooner done it, but we were commanded to be search'd: I was very forward to be the first, though I was most suspected, but none was found about me, so that I was acquitted. But to see with what amazement the poor boy gazed, when they were discovered about him, how strangely he look'd, distorting his face into several forms, produced laughter even from my incensed Master, but real pity from me; for he was severely whipped for that Crime I my self committed. I could recite many more such like Childish rogueries, did I not fear I should be tedious in their relation, and burden the Reader with juvenile follies; therefore I shall return where I left off. Whilest my Mother was in a serious consultation with her Reason, how she should dispose of me, I gave her the slip, resolving to run the resk of Fortune, and try whether mine own endeavours would supply my necessities.

CHAP. III.

How he ran from his Mother, and what courſes he ſteered in one whole years Ramble.

IT was in *Auguſt* when I undertook this my Knight-errantry; the fairneſs of the Seaſon much favoured my Enterpriſe: thinking I ſhould always enjoy ſuch weather, and never be pincht with neceſſity, I went on very couragiouſly. The firſt dinner I made was on Blackberries and Nuts, eſteemed by me very delicious fare at firſt, which delighted me ſo much the more, having not my liberty controul'd. When night approached it ſeemed very uncouth and ſtrange, finding, inſtead of a Feather-bed, no other thing to lie on but a *Haycock*, and no other *coverlid* but the *Canopy of Heaven*. However, this diſturbed not my reſt, for I ſlept profoundly. In the morning I went on in my progreſs as the day before; then began a ſhower of tears to fall from my eyes, conſidering how I had left my diſconſolate, and almoſt heart-broken *Mother*, lamenting my loſs, and that I was travelling I knew not whither moneyleſs, eſpecially finding the grudgings of hungers gripings. *Me*thought I began to loath my aforenamed *Manna*, and longed to taſte of the *Fleſh-pots*, but the *Devil a bit* could I get but what the hedges afforded me. Night came on, which put me in mind of procuring a lodging ſomewhat warmer then the other. A Barn preſently offered its ſelf to my ſight, which

I

I accoſted, and without delay tumbled my ſelf over head and ears in freſh ſtraw. I had not laid there above an hour before I heard a noiſe, and peeping out of the ſtraw, being in a great fear, I ſaw a many ſtrange creatures come into the Barn, for the day was not yet ſhut in. *My* thoughts preſently reminded me that I had heard talk of Hobgoblings, Fairies and the like, and judged theſe no other; and that which confirmed me in this belief, was their talking to one another in a language I underſtood not, (but ſince, I underſtand it to be Canting.) I lay ſtill as long as my fear would permit me, but they ſurrounding me, I was not able to contain my ſelf longer, but cryed out aloud, *Great God, have mercy on me, and let not theſe Devils devour me*; and with that, ſtarted out from among them: They amazed as much as I, ran for it too, leaving their children behind them, every one eſteeming him the happieſt man which was the foremoſt. I looking behind me, ſeeing them following me, imagined theſe Devils would hunt me ſo long that I ſhould not eſcape, wherefore I fell inſtantly on my knees and prayed: the Gypſies quickly overtook me, and finding me in that poſture, ſoon underſtood whence their fear proceeded. They then ſpoke to me in a Language I underſtood, bidding me not be affraid; and if I would accompany them, I ſhould fare as they did. I could not be perſwaded, either to believe or truſt them longer then that night, ſpending the time either in boozing, or wapping, ſuch terms as they uſe, that is, either drinking or whoring, promiſcuously lying one with another: for this canting Crew allow of Community, it being free for any to make choice of what Doxie he liketh beſt, changing when he pleaſeth. They ply'd

me oft with Rum-booz, and pleaſed me ſo well in giving me a young Rum Mort to dally with, that I was much delighted in their converſation, reſolving to liſt my ſelf one of that ragged Regiment: For pennyleſs and Friendleſs I then was, and by that two days ſlenderneſs of diet, I judged how great my wants would be, if I took not ſome courſe for a livelihood, having not wherewithal to ſpend, or means to defray my neceſſary expence.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Wherein he Relates what manner of People they were into whose Society he entered himself; division of their Tribes, Manners, Customs, and Language.

AS ſoon as I had reſolved to travel the Country with them, they fitted me for their company, by ſtripping me, and ſelling my proper garments, and cloathing me in rags, which they pinn'd about me, giving a ſtitch here and there, accordingas neceſsity required. We uſed not when we entered our *Libkin*, or Lodging, to pull off our cloaths; which had I been forced to do, I could never have put them one again, nor any, but ſuch who were accuſtomed to produce *Order* out of a *Babel of rags*. Being now *ale mode de Tatterdemallion*, to compleat me for their purpoſe, with green Walnuts they ſo diſcoloured my face, that every one that ſaw me, would have ſworn I was the true Son of an *Egyptian*. Before we marcht on, let me give you an account of our Leaders, and the rancks we were diſpoſed in. Our chief Commander was called by the name of *Ruffeler*, the next to him *upright-man*, the reſt in order thus:

Hookers, (alias) *Anglers.*	*Prigges.*
Priggers of Prancers.	*Swadlers.*
Pallyards,	*Curtals.*
Fraters.	*Irish.toyle.*

Swigmen.	*Dommerars.*
Jarkemen.	*Glymmerer.*
Patri-Coes.	*Bawdy-Baskets.*
Kitchin-Coes.	*Autem-Morts.*
Abram men.	*Doxies.*
Whip-Jacks.	*Dells.*
Counterfeit-Cranks.	*Kitchin-Morts.*

We muſtered above Threeſcore old and young; and becauſe we were too great a company to march together, we were divided into three Squadrons. The firſt Squadron that led the Van, was ordered by our Commander, to ſtick up ſmall boughs all the way they went, that we might know what courſe they ſteered. For like wilde Foul we flie one after another, and though we are ſcattered like the Quarters of a Traytor, yet like water when cut with a Sword, we eaſily come together again. As the *Switzer* hath his Wench and his Cock with him when he goes to Wars; or like a *Scotch Army*, where every Soldier almoſt hath the *Gend wife*, and the *Bearns* following him: So we had every one his Doxy or Wench, who carried at her back a *Lullaby cheat*, and it may be another in her arms. When they are weary of carrying them, they take their turns to put them in a pair of Panniers, like Green Geeſe going to Market, or like Fiſh in Doſſers coming from *Rye*. Where note, that each diviſion hath a ſmall Horſe or two, or elſe Aſſes to eaſe them of their burdens. Some of us were clad Antickly with Bells and other toys, meerly to allure the Countrey people unto us, which moſt commonly produced their deſired effects. In ſome places they would flock unto us in great quantities, and then was our time to make our markets. We pretended an acquaintance with the Stars (as having an Alliance

to the *Egyptian Magi*, the Founders of Aſtrologick Art) and that the Miniſters of Fate were our Familiars, and ſo poſſeſſing theſe poor ignorant people with a belief, that we could tell their Fortunes by inſpection into either hands or faces; whileſt we were ſeriouſly looking thereon, one of our *Diving Comrades* pickt their Pockets, or with a ſhort ſharp Knife, and a Horn on the Thumb, *nipt* their *bungs*. By asking the ſilly Milk-maids queſtions, we gathered from their own mouths the propereſt reſolutions: Then would they admire, and in their admiration tremble to hear the truth proceed from the mouth of ſuch as were ſtrangers to their actions, by which means, among ſome we gained a great reſpect, accompanied with fear. Did not Aſtrologers make uſe of ſuch Stratagems, they could never acquire ſo much repute among the judicious, as well as vulgar capacities. And becauſe it falls in ſo pat to my preſent purpoſe, I ſhall beg ſo much patience from the Reader, as to give him a brief account of ſome fallacies, ſome *Star-gazing Impoſtors* uſe to work their own ends, and delude credulous people. One whereof I knew, who raiſed his credit (and ſince a conſiderable eſtate) upon the Baſis of good intelligence, He kept a ſervant, who conſtantly attended below the reception of ſuch, who came for ſatisfaction in the Aſtrological Reſolution of Queſtions. This mans Office was to tell the Querent, *That his Maſter was buſie above, about ſome grand concern, but if the perſon would be pleaſed to wait a little while, till that buſineſs was diſpatched; he queſtioned not but that his Maſter would render him a ſatisfactory account of what he demanded:* Adding farther, (to infuſe into him faith, to credit what he ſaid) *That though report had ſpoken largely*, (and yet nothing but what this

Artiſt hath merited) *yet all came far ſhort of his real deſert, having done ſuch ſtupendious things, that muſt needs (without injuſtice) be commemorized to Eternity, and admired by future ages.* In the mean time, this ſervant endeavored to pump out of the Proponent what he came about, which having underſtood, he gave information to his Maſter, by ſo many times ringing a *Bell*. This *item* being given, the Querent is called up, and before ever he can frame his mouth to propound his queſtion, this profound Artiſt prevents him, ſaying, *I know what you come about Sir, (therefore ſave your ſelf the labor to tell me that which I know already) you have loſt a Watch, a Horſe; or you would know how you ſhall proſper in ſuch a buſineſs, whither Marriage, or an Imployment, or any ſuch like common queſtion.* This makes the Artiſt be wondered at; and then erecting a Scheme, poſitively and ſurlily tells him what he muſt expect. And that he might give anſwers more exactly concerning ſtoln goods, he was in conſtant fee with *Thief takers*, who from time to time, made him a report of what perſons were robbed, what the things were, and many times gave him a deſcription of the Fellon. By theſe practices, men believed every word he delivered to be an Oracle; ſo that his Chamber was daily ſo thronged with the reſort of people, that in a ſhort time his ambition pricked him on to purchaſes, with the money he had gained thus fallaciously. One ſtory very remarkable, I ſhall add, and then crave your pardon for this my digreſſion. One day a young Gentleman (but of a mean eſtate) came to him, who was more credulous then wiſe, and more inquiſitive then prudent; and having not that wealth which his prodigality required, deſired inſtructions what courſe

he

he was best to steer to arrive at the Port of his wishes and hopes: viewing him narrowly, he perceived him to be a man of a sweet complexion, and a body well proportioned; and therefore judged him a fit subject for Female fancies to work upon. *Sir* (said he) *I shall give you my best advice, but I shall crave your patience for a little while, for a matter of this weight must not precipitately be undertaken: wherefore if you please to see me to morrow, what lies in me shall be at your service.* Being just gone, it happened that a *Stale Maid*, who had more money then beauty, and less discretion then lechery, came to be resolved of him, *When she should be married*: (for it seems by the sequel she could tarry no longer:) viewing her well, (though she knew not him) he knew her to be wealthy, and nearly related to persons of Quality. *Madam*, (said he) *I shall endeavour your satisfaction*, and so withdrew into his Closet. Having staid a while, bringing out his Figure, and with much gravity looking thereon, he thus unridled the mysterious meanings of the Celestial Bodies. *Madam, You never was much troubled with the importunate suits of amorous Visitants* (this he gathered from the deformity of her Phisiogminy) *they all knowing your indifferency to change your condition, but upon considerable grounds, by which means you have almost frustrated what the Stars have designed for you. I hope it is but almost*, (said she) *not altogether*: for it troubled her very much to hear she should leave the world without tasting the sweets of a married life. *No*, (he replied, *for if to morrow by four of the Clock in the Afternoon; you go into* Moorfields, *and take a turn or two in the* Userers Walk) *you shall there meet with a person rich and handsome, that at first sight shall fall in love extreamly with*

you,

you: slight him not, neither deny him his conjugal proposal; if you do, it will be too late to hope for an husband. You shall distinguish him from others by these signs: His Complexion is fair, his Eye sharp and piercing, his Hair flaxen, of a middle Stature. Her joy had like to have transported her beyond the bounds of modesty, which she could not conceal, but made it appear in a pecuniary expression of her gratitude for such welcome tidings; and so promising him to follow his counsel, she took her leave. The next morning the young Gallant came, who had his lesson given him: but before he went, he made him give him a Bond of 200*l.* to be paid upon the day of his marriage with that Gentlewoman: which he gladly consented to, and paid that very sum within ten days after: for according to the directions was given him, he met with that Gentlewoman describ'd to him, as he had been before to her, who at the first sight of each other, were incapable of containing themselves, but mutually imbraced (after three or four words past) as if he had been her (*quondam*) Dearly Beloved, returned from some long Voyage, and went not to their respective lodgings till their marriage was consummated. But to return where I left off.

Thus we rambled up and down the Country; and where the people demean'd themselves not civil to us by voluntary contributions, their Geese, Hens, Pigs, or any such mandible thing we met with, made us satisfaction for their hide-bound injuries. Our revenge most commonly was very bloody, and so mercilefs, that whatever fell into our hands, never escaped alive, and in our murders so cruel, that nothing would satisfie us but the very hearts-blood of what we killed. The usual sacrifices of our inplacable revenge, were innocent Lambs, Sheep, Calves,

&c.

&c. All which we handled more ſeverely then priſoners are by Serjeants, when they are not paid their unjuſt Demands. Fees, I ſhould have ſaid, but that by experience I have found, they walk not according to the Rules of ancient Conſtitutions, but are guided by the dictates of their inſatiate wills, which is their Law, which poor Priſoners muſt indulge, (though they rack their ſlender credits, or pawn their cloaths) or elſe they muſt expect leſs kindneſs from them, then a condemned perſon about to be tyed up by the Hangman, who will ſtay till he is ready to be turned off. A Gooſe coming among us, we have a trick to make him ſo wiſe, as never to be a Gooſe again: But let the wiſeſt uſe what tricks they can, they never ſhall make ſome Serjeants honeſt men. We ſeize the prey, and leave the Tragical part to our *Morts* or Women to act: the *Stage* on which they perform their parts, is either ſome large *Heath*, or *Firz-buſh-Common*, far from any Houſe. This being done, and night approaching, we repair to our Dormitories, or Houſes of Reſt, which are moſt uſually Out-barns of Farmers and Husbandmen, which we make choice of in ſome poor ſtragling Village, who dare not deny us, for fear ere the morning they finde their Thatcht-houſes too hot to hold them. Theſe Barns ſerve us in ſtead of Cook-Rooms, Supping Parlours, and Bed-Chambers; having Supt, (moſt commonly in a plentiful manner) we cannot *Couch a Hogſhead*, that is to ſay, Sleep, without good ſtore of *Rhum-booze*, that is, Drink; and having ſufficiently warmed our brains with humming Liquor, which our *Lower* (Silver) ſhall procure; if our deceitful *Maunding* (begging) cannot, we then ſing a Catch or two in our own Language, of which we had good ſtore; which

for

for their baudry I omit: However, give me leave to inſtance one Canting Song, and I ſhall wave the reſt, being loath to tire you too much with one thing.

BIng out bien Morts, and toure, and toure,
Bing out bien Morts, and toure;
For all your Duds are bing'd awaſt,
The bien Cove hath the loure.
I met a Dell, I view'd her well,
She was benſhip to my watch;
So ſhe and I did ſtall, and cloy,
whatever we could catch.
This Doxie Dell can cut bien whids,
And wap well for a win;
And prig and cloy ſo benſhiply,
All the Deuſea-vile within.
The boyle was up, we had good luck,
In Froſt for and in Snow:
When they did ſeek, then did we creep,
And plant in Ruff-mans low.
To Strawling Ken the Mort bings then,
To fetch loure for her cheats;
Duds and Ruffe-peck, Rombold by Harmanbeck,
And won by Maunders feats.
Ye Maunders all, ſtow what you ſtall,
To Rome Coves what ſo Quire,
And wapping Dell, that niggles well,
And takes loure for her hire.
And Jybe well jerkt, teck rome confect,
For back by glymmar to Maund;
To mill each ken, let Cove bing then,
Through Ruff-mans, Jague, or Laund,
Till Cramprings quire tip Cove his hire,
And Quire Ken do them catch:

A canniken, mill quire Cuffen,
So Quire to ben Coves watch.
Bien Darkmans then, Bonse Mort and Ken,
The bien Coves bings awast,
On Chates to trine by Rome-Coves dine,
For his long lib at last.
Bing'd out bien Morts and toure, and toures
Bing out of the Rome vile bine,
And toure the Cove that cloyd your duds,
Upon the Chates to trine.

Having even wearied our selves with drinking and singing, we tumbled promiscuously together, Male and Female in Straw, not confining our selves to one constant Consort, we make use of the first that comes to hand; by which means Incests and Adulteries become our pastimes. By this means I grew weary of their practices, and therefore resolved to desert them as soon as the first opportunity should offer it self, which was in a short time; wherefore at the present I shall say no more of them, onely give me leave to give some small account of their Language. The first Inventor of Canting, as I am informed, was hanged about fourscore years since: such *Gibberish* was never heard of before, since which time, there hath not been wanting such, who have taken pains in the polishing, refining, and augmenting that Language of the *Devils Imps*. It is a confused invention of words; for its Dialect I cannot finde to be grounded on any certain Rules; and no wonder, since the Founders and Practicers thereof, are the chief Fathers and Nourishers of Disorder. Yet even out of that Irregularity a man may observe some kinde of form, and some words do retain something of Scholarship, as *Togeman* a Gown, from *Toga*; *Ran-*

nam,

nam, from *Panis*, Bread; *Caſan*, *Caſeus*, Cheeſe. The monoſyllable *Cheat*, we uſe as a Relative, as *Nab*, a Head; *Nab-cheat*, a Hat, &c. *Cove* or *Cuffin* is in general terms a Man; but by adding *bien*, which ſignifies good, or well, or *Quire*, which is wicked or Knaviſh; you make the word *Cove* ſignifie an *Honeſt man*, or a *Juſtice of Peace*. Pardon the expreſſion, for they call a Juſtice *Quier-Cuffin*; that is to ſay, as before-mentioned, a wicked, knaviſh, or fooliſh man. To conclude, I ſhall here inſert this little Canting Vocabulary Alphabetically.

Autem Mort	A Married Woman
Abram	Naked
Abram Cove	A Tatterdemallion
Autem	A Church
Bughar	A Cur
Bouſe	Drink
Bouſing Ken	An Ale-houſe
Borde	A Shilling
Boung	A Purſe
Bien	Good or well
Benſhiply	Very well
Benar	Better
Bing	To go
Bing a waſte	To go away
Bube	The Pox
Bufe	A Dog
Bleating cheat	A Sheep
Belly cheat	An Apron
Betty	An Inſtrument to break (a door.
Cove } *Cuffin* }	A Man

Cuffin

Cuffin Quire	A Juſtice of Peace
Cramprings	Bolts or Shackles
Chats	The Gallows
Canke	Dumb
Crackmans	Hedges
Calle, *Togeman*, *Joſeph*	A Cloak
Couch	To lye or ſleep
Couch a Hogſhead	To go to ſleep
Commiſſion	A Shirt
Cackling cheat	A Chicken
Caſſan	Cheeſe
Craſh	To kill
Craſhing cheats	Teeth
Cloy	To ſteal
Cut	To ſpeak
Cut bien whids	To ſpeak well
Cut quire whids	To ſpeak evilly
Confeck	Counterfeit
Cannakin	The Plague
Cly the Jerk	To be whipt
Clapperdogeon	A Begger born
Culle	A Sap-headed Fellow
Dimber	Pretty
Damber	Raſcal
Drawers	Stockings
Duds	Goods
Deuſea-vile	The Countrey
Dommerar	A Madman
Darkmans	Night or Evening
Doxie, *Dell*	A Wench

Dock	To Swive
Wap	
Deuſwins	Two pence
Dup	To enter
Earneſt	A part
As tip me my Earneſt	Give me my part or ſhare
Frummagem	Choakt
Filch	A Staff
Ferme	A Hole
Fambles	Hands
Famble cheats	Rings or Gloves
Fib	To beat
Flag	A Groat
Fogus	Tobacco or Smoke
Glymmer	Fire
Glaziers	Eyes
Grannome	Corn
Gentry Mort	A Gallant Wench
Gan	A Lip
Gage	A Pot or Pipe
Grunting cheat	A Sucking Pig
Giger	A Door
Gybe	Any Writing or Paſs
Harmanbeck	A Conſtable
Harmans	The Stocks
Heave a Booth	To rob an Houſe
Half bord	Six pence
Hearts eaſe	A twenty ſhillings piece
Jocky	A Flayl or Mans Privities
Jague	A Ditch
Jarke	A Seal
Ken	An Houſe
Kinchin	Little

Kinchin Cove	A little man
Kate	A Pick-lock
Loure	Money
Lightmans	Morning or day
Lib	To tumble
Libken	An House to lie in
Lage	Water
Libbege	A Bed
Lullabie-cheat	A Childe
Lap	Porrage
Maunder	To Beg
Maunders	Beggers
Margery Prater	An Hen
Mill	To steal
Make	An half-penny
Mynt	Gold
Muffling cheat	A Napkin
Mumpers	Gentile Beggers
Nab	An Head
Nab-cheat	An Hat
Nap	To take / Or cheat
Palliard	One whose Father is a Begger born
Paplar	Milk-Porrage
Prats	Thighs
Prigg	To Ride
Peckidge	Meat
Pannam	Bread
Plant	To lay or hide
Prigging	Riding
Prancer	An Horse
Prating cheat	A Tongue

Plant your whids	Have a care what you
Quarron	A Body
Quacking cheat	A Duck
Quier	Wicked or Roguish
Quier-Ken	A Prison
Quier-Mort	A Pocky Jade
Quier-Cove	A Rogue
Romboyle	A Ward or Watch
Rome	Gallant
Rome-vile	London
Rome-Mort	A Gallant Girl
Ruffin	The Devil
Kuffler	An over-grown Rogue
Ruffe-peck	Bacon
Red-ſhanke	A Mallard
Rom-pad	The High-way
Rome-padders	High-way-men
Rome-Culle	A Rich Coxcomb
Stamps	Legs
Scoure	To wear
Skew	A Diſh
Slate	A Sheet
Strommel	Straw or Hair
As; She hath good ſtore of Strommel on her Merkin	Anglice, *&c.*
Skepper	A Barn
Stow your whids	Be wary
Stalling-Ken	A Brokers Houſe, or an Houſe to receive ſtollen Goods.
Smelling-cheat	A Garden
Solomon	The Maſs
Toure	To look out

Tib o' th' Buttery	A Gooſe
Tip	To give
The Mort tipt me a wink	The Whore gave me a wink
Trine	A Tyburn
Trining	Hanging
Tick-Rome	A Licenſe
Tres wins	Three pence
Win	A Penny
Tarum	Milk

Thus much for a taſte: I think it not worth my pains to inſert all thoſe Canting words which are uſed; it is enough that I have here divulged what words are moſt in uſe. Having now deſerted this *Tawny Crew*, I reſolved to betake my ſelf to a new Trade; which you ſhall underſtand in this following Diſcourſe.

CHAP. V.

How he went a Begging. What Rules he observ'd therein. What Villanies he committed whilst he profest that mysterious Art.

NEceſſity is a thing better known by the effects, then its character; and of all things the moſt inſufferable: to prevent which, it puts a man on to venture upon all manner of diſhoneſt and dangerous actions, ſuggeſting ſtrange imaginations, and deſperate reſolutions, ſolliciting things infamous, and attempting things impoſſible; the product of which is only diſorder, confuſion, ſhame, and in the end ruine. But when Neceſſity ſhall conjoyn with an evil diſpoſition, a deprav'd nature, what horrid and nefarious facts will it not inſtigate that man to perpetrate? And though he ſeeth monthly examples of perſons condemned and executed for the like crimes he daily practiſeth, will not forbear nor deſiſt from ſuch irregular and life-deſtroying courſes, till they have brought him to the like miſerable Cataſtrophe. Neceſſity had now deeply fain in love with me; and the young Virgin Shamefac'dneſs (once my Miſtreſs) had forſaken me: for as ſoon as I had pull'd but one thread out of her garment, all the reſt unravell'd; and ſhe not brooking her nakedneſs, changed her maſter, and ſo totally

tally left me. In this condition as I travelled, I begg'd with very good ſucceſs. But me thought my life was ſomewhat uncomfortable without a Companion, (all Creatures coveting ſociety, but more eſpecially Man:) at length, according to my deſires, I met with one, whoſe long practice in this Art, (beſides the Obſervations of his Predeceſſors, deriving his Pedegree in a direct line from *Prince Prigg*) indu'd him with ſo much skill, as to furniſh me with the knowledge of any thing that belonged to the liberal Art of Begging. We ſtraight betook our ſelves to the *Boozing-Ken*; and having *bubb'd rhumly*, we concluded an everlaſting friendſhip. Then did he recount to me the moſt material things obſerveable in our Profeſſion. Firſt, he tun'd my voice to that pitch which might moſt of all raiſe compaſſion; then he told me when we came to *London*, he would acquaint me what places were moſt fit for our purpoſe, and what times. That I ought not to be too importunate to ſome, always wiſhing well, and loudly praying for the health and ſafety of Eſtate and Limbs of ſuch as deny'd me Alms; but more eſpecially pronounce a *God bleſs you Maſter, and let heaven reward what you have here done on earth*, if any thing beſtowed upon me. If any ſhould pity my nakedneſs, and cloath me in garments without holes in them, I ſhould wear them no longer then in the Donors ſight, reſerving my rags to re-inveſt my ſelf, and ſell the other, as unfit and ſcandalous to our Occupation. That we ſhould never beg far from one another, and at nights faithfully ſhare the gains. Moreover, he inform'd me the way to make all ſorts of ſeeming ſores and lameneſs. That within the tatter'd rags, there be places provided for

private conveyance. Some of maturer age, if they have no children, rent them of such as have: but we had no occasion for this fallacie. That if I saw a door open, I should go in boldly; if I met any in the way, I should then in a very submissive manner implore their help in the assistance of my wants, never desiring any thing but what was of small value, one half-peny, farthing, or some broken crust, pretending the not eating of a bit in two days. If the passage was clear, whip away what was neareſt to hand. That the time of rising in the morning be very early, shewing my self in the streets: for then will those that pass by, judg I have no other lodging but what a stall affords, that way procuring relief from pitiful-minded persons, and so continue begging till the evening: when it beginneth to be duskish, if any then walks singly, accost him in a begging form; coming up so close, as that you may knock him down with a Truncheon, still carried about for that purpose; which is done securely, and many times with a good booty.

Being full fraught with these, and many more precepts he delivered, we set forth on our progress. We had not gone far, before we were surprized by the Constable, as two sturdy Vagrants; and as *handsail* to my new Trade, we were both soundly whipt out of town. To avoid this danger for the time to come, we mist all the towns of any considerable note in our way, and only frequented Villages; nay, we were forc'd to avoid the High-ways: for Travellers observing our garb, countenances, and weapon, which was a battoon, suspecting us, would before they came near us, set spurs to their horses, and ride as if the Devil drove them. Many petty rogueries

we

we performed by the way; nor worth the commemoration, and therefore shall pass them by; only this shall insert.

Travelling the Field-way, we stumbled on a *Tinker* and his *Trull* lying by an Hedeg-side; I askt them what they lay there for? They answered me, That they were lately bitten by a Serpent near adjacent, a potent creature, mighty in strength, and of a vast proportion. I desired them to shew us the place of his residence, which they readily consented to. Instead of this Venomous Animal, they only brought us to its representation in a sign, where a Cup of double-brew'd Beer was sold. The people lik'd the Tinker and his Female Comrade well enough, but would not admit of us, till we shew'd them money; For our Vestments look'd like the Gleanings of a Rag-merchants Yard. We drank stifly till we laid the Woman asleep: she had not slept long, but up she started, pull'd up her coats, and pis's'd in the middle of the room, and so sat her self down, yet awaked not: which action could not but produce much laughter from me and my Comrade. At last the Tinker fell asleep too, having gotten a greater load then he could well carry. Now had my wits enough to work on: but finding my self very drowsie, for the strength of the drink had almost over-powered me, insomuch that I was forc'd to advise with my friend what course I were best take to make me a little more sober: he was so well known in such matters, (being an old experienced Pitcher-man) that he quickly counselled me what to do, he himself being not in the least disturb'd. This was his advice; he got a Pail full of water, and so taking me up by the heels, clapt my head there-

into; holding me in that manner so long, that the *Pail* had like to have provid the *Ferry-boat* that should waft me over the *Stygian Lake*; however, coming to my self, I found it had wrought its desired effects.

After this, we ransacke their pockets, but found little in the mans; but searching the woman in a private place betwern her Pocket and Placket, we discovered something considerable, which we took. Having so done, we thought it high time to be gone; but first we resolv'd to make some sport, as well as take their moneys, which was thus: I ty'd to each of their Girdles behind a Flaggon-pot, and to each a Label affixt, or a paper of Verses, and so immediately tript off. The Host seeing us go out of doors with more then ordinary speed, ran into the room where the *Tinker* and his *Lady* were: he suddenly awakt them, telling them we were gone. Hearing this, they hastily started up, and ran to over-take us: the Master of the house seeing his Pots dangling at their breech, ran after the *Tinker*, crying, *Stop 'em, stop 'em*; the Hoste bearing the same note, *Stop the thievish Tinker, stop the Whore with my Pot.* This Out-cry soon alarm'd the ears of his Neighbours, who with the Host seizing on them, and carrying them back, gave us an opportunity for our escape. The Lines that were about the *Tinkers* Pot, were these, to my best remembrance.

Serpents but sting, or only bite so deep,
To numb the sense, so lay men fast asleep.
Wit acts far greater things. I'll say no more;
Pay first for sleeping, then the Pots restore.

Those

Those that were fastened to the Woman's Pots were these:

'Twas not the Serpent, but strong Beer that stung:
The vent being stopt, the Drink wrought through the Bung.
Yet 'twas a Viper sure; I heard him hiss:
I look't, and found him all dissolv'd to Piss.
Had her Brass Squire but stopt her Leak at last,
She had not let her Liquor out so fast.

From hence we went straight for London, where we soon arriv'd.

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

Coming to London, he enters himself into the Society of Beggars, distinguished by these Titles; Ben-speakers, Dommerars, Clapperdogeons, *&c. With a short description of their Manners and Customes; as also a Relation of a piece of Theft he committed.*

COming up to *London*, we straightway betook our selves to *Newington-Butts*; but by the way, my Friend could not forbear calling on his Friends in *Kent-street*; here they gave me a Nick-name; and my Comrade immediately fell to work, to put himself into an equipage fit for the employment we had undertaken. He needed not to alter his habit; but his chief aime was to make counterfeit Sores or Cleymes, according to the term of Art that is given them. With the assistance of some of the Fraternity, he had in an hours time, such a Leg, that I could hardly look upon it without even dropping down; and thus they made it: They took unslaked Lime and Sope, mingled with the rust of old Iron; these being well temper'd together, they did spred it thick on two pieces of Leather, which they applyed to his Leg, binding it thereunto very hard, which in a short time did fret off the skin, the flesh appearing all raw; then did they take blood, and rub'd it all over his Leg; which being fully dried, made

made the Leg appear all black; the Sore they did only let peep out of the holes of five or six matterish clouts. He soon got us a Doxie too, with a couple of children (the fitter for our purpose) the one to carry in her arms, and the other to lead. Providing himself and me a good lusty *Filch* or Stick, with a hole at the end thereof, to put in a hook if occasion should serve, to filch any thing off Hedges, *&c.* Away we went into *Moor-fields*: he would have made me a *Cleyme* too, or an Artificial sore; but my stomack would no wayes accept of his kindness. Coming into th'Fields, he planted me in a convenient place, the *Doxie* with her *Lullaby-cheats* in another, and himself in a third, not far distant from one another, that one might catch the others *Maunding* at the rebound: I observ'd my *Friend* and *Rogue* diligently, what he did, for my own information. One would have sworn he had been absolutely lame, for (about to lie down) he slid to the earth by his Staff; being on the ground, the first thing I took notice of, was the pitious distorting of his face into various forms, to stir up compassion in such as passed by him; to which he added a most doleful noise, to this effect; *For Gods-sake, some tender-hearted Christians, cast through your merciful eyes, one pitiful look, upon a sore, lame, and miserable wretch: Bestow one penny or half-penny upon him that is ready to perish, &c.* I knew not how to tune my voice, for hearkening to him; which he observing (when all the people were passed by) he held up his stick at me, a strong argument of his great displeasure, which lest I might farther incur, I was forced to tone it out to some purpose. Night approaching, we left off begging, resolving to recreate our selves with what we had

had got: in the way home, I saw a very fine piece of Beef lying on a Butchers stall: the woman that kept the Shop, was telling a Gossips tale to her neighbour so intentively, as I thought I might seize on my prey, and she never the wiser; with that I boldly snatched it up; which an opposite neighbour perceiving, ran after me, and soon took me. I was brought back before the woman, who was so wise (forsooth) that she would not receive stollen goods, though they were her own; and so inraged she was, that nothing would serve her turn, but I must go before a Justice; and to add to my punishment, she made me carry the stollen Beef openly. Coming before his Worship, my accusation was read, aggravated by many feigned circumstances. The pitiful and sad casts of my eyes, were all the Rhetorick I used in my own vindication; which the merciful Justice perceiving, they were so prevalent, as to gain some favour from him; whereupon he ask'd the woman what she valued her Beef at? *Why* (said she) *I would not have abated a penny of five shillings. Take heed what you say, good woman,* (said he) *for should you swear this, it is enough to hang him. O Lord, Sir,* (said she) *I would not hang him for a world.* Then said his Worship, *You must prize it under thirteen pence half-penny*; whereupon the Butchers wife was content to value it at eight pence. The price being set, the Beef was conveyed into the Justices Kitching, and the woman put to her Oath; having sworn, my *Mittimus* was made, and I therewith sent to Prison. The woman now thought she should have her Beef, and therefore demanded it; but the Justice told her he would buy it of her, and so asked her what she would

would have for it: *Sir*, (said she) *five shillings; I cannot afford it one farthing under. How, how!* (said he) *did not you swear but even now, it was worth but eight pence, and do you now talk of five shillings? A meer Cheat, Extortioner, &c.* Make her *Mittimus*, (speaking to his Clerk) which so terrified the Woman, that she was content to loose her Beef. I am sure I wished those that did eat it, choaked; for never did *Roman Catholick* endure greater and severer *Penance* for eating Flesh on *Good-fryday*, then I for coveting this; I have lov'd a Capon the better for it ever since. Being freed out of Goal by some of our Society, I fell to the old Trade again.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

A Merchant seeing him begging, took a fancy to him, conducts him to his House, and entertains him as his servant.

ONe day as I was begging, more fervently then formerly, having gotten not one penny that day, (there being also a civil War between my Guts and Stomack) a Tradesman, of no mean quality, passing by, took a strong fancy to me, being extraordinarily pleased with the form of my face and body. He asked me, Whence I came? what my Parents were? and what I intended? I answered him with well-contriv'd forgeries, that seemed to give him good satisfaction; liking well both my speech and understanding, he bid me follow him, which accordingly I did; having conducted me to his house, he presented me to his Wife, my intended Mistress, telling her his resolutions of receiving me into his service; at which she blest her self, saying, *Prethee, Sweet-heart, from what dung-hill didst thou pick up this* Shakerag, *this squire of the body?* (for I am sure I had but few cloaths on, but what were rather fit to dung ground, then to be sent to the Paper-mill.) Said my Master, *Rest your self satisfied, since it is my pleasure this shall be so: neither can I give you any reason for my fancy.* Whereupon he commanded me to be stript, and

and well washed, in the mean time cloaths were provided for me. It was my good fortune to observe my Mistress standing in a private place on purpose to see me dismantled; & after I was washed, she commended the whiteness of my skin and well-proportioned limbs; and by the consequent, approved (within her self) of something else; for I was then a stubbed Lad. Being new cloathed, and raised to this unexpected fortune, how strangely did this vain blast puff up my empty pate! However, I was resolved to carry my self discreetly, lest I should overthrow the state I was then in, not yet well setled. Wherefore, I behaved my self very respectfully towards him, and served him as punctually as I could, endeavouring that my service should requite his kindness in as great a measure as my abilities could perform.

My endeavour was not only to please my Master, but my Mistress too, even in the meanest services; so officious to her, that her Chamber-maid could not perform much more. The Maid-servants I obliged also, by doing their duty; by which I so ingratiated my self among them, that I always had their good estimation among themselves, and good word to my Master and Mistress when occasion served. Very careful I was, not to report what I heard, lest I by that means involv'd my self in the affairs of others, without advantage to my self. For by medling in others matters, I should breed animosity among them, and reap just hatred to my self. This I looked on as an undeniable maxime, That nothing more recommends a man, then a silent tongue, (unless necessity required the contrary) a fair complacential carriage, and a faithful heart.

My

My Master, in an humour, would sometimes find fault with me, but then it was my chiefest care not to reply, knowing, that what should be alleadged as to my just vindication, would but aggravate his spirits being passionate, alwayes punctually performing what was commanded me. A strange alteration, you will say; but all this was only to get a good esteem, whereby I might gain fast footing. What though I underwent a great deal of pains, and endured, or tryed my patience to the heighth? yet I gain'd much in the end, had God given me grace rightly to use it, and the baseness of my nature not perswaded me to abuse it. So much credit I had gain'd with my Master, by my civil behaviour, that he raised me *gradatim*, step by step. Being ignorant of Arithmetick, he caused a Master to come to his house to instruct me, which I soon apprehended, and by that means was capacitated to keep his accompts, which was the thing I aim'd at, intending thereby the prosecution of mine own ends, notwithstanding my pretended fidelity, and his real kindness to me undeserv'd: which puts me in mind of the conclusion of an Epitaph I have read on a Tomb, which the Master erected for the perpetual commemoration of his servants cordial respect and honesty.

View oft this Tomb-stone, since we seldome find,
A Servant faithful, and his Master kind.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

How he came acquainted with lewd and and vicious Apprentices. What Trade they drove together. What places and times of metting.

I Was as officious at home, as reserved from all company, never stirring forth unless called out by my *Masters* business, till my next Neighbourman intruded himself into my acquaintance: He met on a time abroad, and would not be deny'd but he must needs fasten a glass of Wine, conducting me to a Tavern where the Drawer (as he said) was his friend. After several Congratulations past, order was given for a pint of Canary: being gone to draw it, this young man began to tell me what an honest fellow this *Ralph* the Drawer is; which words he had no sooner utter'd, but I heard him cry at the Bar, *A Pint of White-wine in the Rose score*; and immediately in he brings it, and in formality a glass, but we made no use of it, for he was fearful his *Master* would discover the cheat, and therefore made haste, making but two draughts thereof. Away he goes again, and brings in another, not after the same manner, crying it, *Right*, but bringing withal a Quart-Bottle in his Codpiece: *Now, Gentlemen,* (said he) *using your discretion, you may sit and talk freely, without either fear or suspition.* Then my Neighbour *Thomas* told me that this was frequent,

and that he and two or three friends at any time, could be drunk for six pence a piece. *Come, come, you are but a Novice*, said he; *but if you will be ruled by me, I will shew you the way to soften the cord of bondage, to make the long time of a seven years Apprenticeship seem short, by living as merry, nay, more jovially then our Masters. They may be distracted with cares how to procure necessaries, pay Rent, and satisfie Creditors, whilest we have none of these pressures and disturbances on our spirits. What though we have an harsh word, or a smart blow, it may be, a broken pate? We will make his Till spring a leak for it, or his Goods go to Pot, and break him at last too. It may be his Provision is neither dainty nor plentiful, nay, restrained from our liberty too: 'Tis onely by day then, we will be Masters of our own at night, not wanting any thing that may conduce to mirth, or the delectation of our insatiate senses.*

I asked him how could this be done? He answered, *If I would swear to be secret and faithful, and become a Brother of the Society, he would not onely tell me how all this* (afore recited) *might be performed, but would likewise introduce me into the place where these jolly Blades used to congregate.* I soon consented, rejoycing exceedingly at this blessed opportunity, (as I thought it) wherein I might sail in the Ocean of Delight, bound for no other Port but that of Pleasure or Profit, never considering the inevitable Quicksands which such meet withal, steering that course, having no other Compass to sail by then their own Fancy. First, he informed me, that I must insinuate my self into the Maids favor, so that, when the occasion shall require, she may let you have the Key of the Street-door, or else sit up

for

for your return. That I muſt never fail coming home to gratifie her kindneſs. If ſhe be modeſt and continent, onely kiſs her, often repeating this thing to her: *O that I was out of my time, if it were for nothing elſe, but to repay thee thy love! So great an acknowledgment I have of thy civilities, that I hope a time will come, wherein I ſhall make full ſatisfaction for all, &c.* If ſhe be buckſome, or wantonly given, ſhe will never be content with hopes; wherefore you muſt kiſs, hug, and embrace her, telling how dearly you love her; and then fall to ſomewhat elſe: She may put you off at firſt with a *Piſh*, a *Fye*, or *Pray be civil*; yet be ſo far from denying, that if you proceed not on vigorouſly, ſhe will prompt you her ſelf, to try what mettle you are made of. But be very cautious of procreation, which you may prevent ſeveral ways. Now to tell you what manner of perſons we are, there are few among us, but what are of ſeveral Trades, ſelected, as *Linnen-Drapers*, *Mercers*, *Woollen-Drapers*, *Silkmen*, *Hoſiers*, *Haberdaſhers*, *Merchants*, *Grocers*, *Goldſmiths*, *Jewellers*, *Ribband-ſellers*, *Exchangemen*, to which add a *Drawer* and an *Oylman*, the one to furniſh us with good Liquor, and the other to prepare our pallates for it. Every one brings his ſeveral Commodities, then do we exchange or barter one with another for what each reſpective perſon wants, either to ſupply his own occaſion, or his Miſtreſs: For it is to be ſuppoſed ſuch a thing muſt be had; when procured, muſt be maintained, though to the deſtruction of our Maſters Eſtates, and ruine of our bodily health.

All this I liked wonderfully well, and promiſed to meet that day ſeven night at the place appointed,

and ſo we parted. Come home, I immediately put theſe preſcriptions into practice; firſt, taking notice of what Goods we had greateſt quantity, and whatſoever Commodity my *Maſter* forgot he had, I always ſecured it as mine own: nay, ſometimes I would try him; *There was ſuch a perſon enquiring for ſuch a thing to day when you were abroad, but I could not find it*: it may be he would ſay, *we had it not*; ſuiting my deſign according to deſire. Having taken a thorow view of the Shop and Warehouſe, I ſaw ſo may ways of advantage, if aſſiſted by a cleanly conveyance, that I could ſhip as well as the moſt forward of them all.

The next thing I had to do, was to endear my ſelf to the chief *Maid*, who was one of thoſe that aſſiſted to waſh me; and as ſhe confeſt ſince, took an affection to me from that hour. It required no long time to court her into a compliance, her complexion or temperament forcing her acceptance of any thing amorously inclined: the colour of her Hair inclined to Red, which colour (though I know not for what reaſon) I love above any: her Skin (as the uſual attendant of Red or Flaxenith Hair) was as white as Whiteneſs it ſelf: her Cheeks naturally painted with *Vermilion*; plump where her Checks and Lips with a *Mole* thereon, and a dimple in her Chin, as the infallible marks of one that is willing to dedicate her ſelf to the ſervice of *Venus*. Beſides, her ſmall round *Breaſts* by their hearing and ſetting, ſeemed to ſpeak what motion ſhe liked beſt, panting out the ardency of her deſire from her very heart, to underſtand one of the main intents of her Creation, to wit, to *Increaſe and Multiply*.

Having

Having a fit opportunity, after some amorous discourse, I desired her she would grant me leave that night to talk with her in private, having business of importance to impart to her in private: she condescended to my proposition. As soon as our *Master* and *Mistress* were gone to take their rest, her impatience to hear what I would say made her soon send the rest to bed. The house being thus clear'd, and all things silent as the Air, when Winds into their hollow grots repair, I acquainted her with the greatness of my affection, which I delivered with all the Rhetorick I could invent, still touching that string which produced Loves harmonious concord: So fervent I was in my expressions, and so ardent and hot in my desires, that I soon melted the congeal'd Iceness of her Chastity: but first there were mutual Articles deciprocally drawn and agreed unto; *viz.*

That if she proved with child, I should marry her.

That I should devote my self to her service, and nones else.

That we should both endeavour to make use of all opportunities for the enjoyment of each other.

That to prevent discovery, we should often fall out before people, that without suspition in private we might fall in: throwing oft-times bones at my head when sitting at Dinner, because she would not be deprived of the Grißel. So great was our seeming feud sometimes, that our Master was call'd in to part us.

After this, I gave her plenary instructions as to my affairs, which she faithfully and punctually promised to observe. Then we seal'd, though without witnesses.

The night was come wherein I was to meet ac-

cording to promiſe. I acquainted my *Amoretta* with my intention of going out at twelve a clock; and that my Maſter might not in the leaſt ſuſpect me, I went to bed, but aroſe at the hour promiſed. The firſt time I would not carry any Commodities with me, reſolving to ſee firſt what they did. Being come to the houſe, I was introduced by my Neighbour *Thomas* into a private back-rorm, among the aſſociated Brethren. I was much amazed to ſee ſuch variety of Wares lie upon a long table, as Silks, Stuffs, Cloth *L*innen and Woolen, Stockings, Ribands, *M*uffs, Scarfs, and the like. Some of them came to me, and wellcomed me as a *B*rother, drinking to me in a Beer-bowl of Sack and Sugar.

*M*oſt of the company being met, they truckt with each other according to their convenience. Several things were offered me; I told them I had brought nothing to retaliate in lieu; they told me my credit was good, which is the Soul of Commerce; telling me they ſhould have occaſion to make uſe of me in the like nature. I took with me onely ſuch things as might be proper to beſtow at home, to whom I had lately enlarged my affections; which I preſented her with, accompanied with many expreſſions and proteſtations of a never-dying affection. She accepted of my kindneſs with much gratitude, but thought ſhe could not fully remunerate me without a re-admiſſion into her private and then particular favours. I could eaſily diſcern her inclinations by griping of my hand, kiſſing as if ſhe would devour me, the palpetation of her heart, and her inflamed eyes. I ran parallel with her in the ſame deſires; ſo that with much facility we two

made

made a Conjunctive Copulative. Having ſported our ſelves ſufficiently, (as I thought) yet nothing would content her but lying together. I ſoon aſſented to it, though to the hazard of both our credits and fortunes. I deſired her to go up firſt, telling her I would follow inſtantly after. By that time I thought ſhe was in bed, up marcht I the ſtairs, which creakt as if they had conſpired the diſcovery of our lechery. Coming up to the higheſt ſtair, I raiſed my foot, (being fearful of making any noiſe) thinking there had been another, it deſcended with ſuch precipitation, that I made the houſe Eccho. The Chamber wherein my Maſter (and the Maid lay in a Trundle-bed underneath him) and my Miſtreſs lay, was right againſt this ſtair-head. My Maſter had taken a doſe more then Ordinary of Sack, ſo that this noiſe awak'd him not: my Miſtreſs at the firſt hearing thereof, imagined Thieves had broken in; ſhe endeavoured to wake her Husband, by ſtirring him, but could not, therefore thought it the beſt way to lie ſtill, and expect the event. In the mean time I lay *perdue*, ſtirring not till I imagined my *Miſtreſs* aſleep again. The *Maid*, tyr'd out with hot ſervice a little before, and concluding I durſt not adventure further by reaſon of this unfortunate accident, fell immediately into a profund sleep. Finding (after a conſiderable time) all things ſtill and quiet, I entred the Chamber, dark as Hell, and in a low voice, groaping the contrary way, I cryed, *Where art?* *Here, here*, ſaid my *Miſtreſs*, in a whiſpering tone: minding from whence the ſound came as near as I could, I directed my foot-ſteps to that place: the ſame words being repeated, conveyed me exactly to that ſide of the bed whereon

my Miſtreſs lay. Taking her about the neck, I kiſt her a thouſand times, uſing then all the alluring and loving expreſſions I could invent, not perceiving my miſtake. I made all the haſt I could (and all too little) to undreſs my ſelf; which was done in an inſtant: opening the Cloths to come to bed, *Hold*, ſaid my *Miſtreſs*, *I have a Bed-fellow already; what I have ſuffered you to do, was onely as a tryal, to underſtand what you intended. Get you gone to your own bed for this night, and I ſhall talk with you farther to morrow.* I durſt not reply, not daring to ſtay longer, but betook my ſelf to my own chamber, poſſeſt with fear and ſhame. I nothing but toſt and tumbled, taking not the leaſt reſt.

In the morning early I was up, ſhewing my ſelf more then ordinary diligent. But Lord, what a confuſion I was in, when I ſaw my *Miſtreſs* come into the Shop? I made an hundred pretences to ſtoop behind the Counter, and rectifie diſordered Wares: ſo buſie was I with my back towards her, that ſhe could not have ſo much as a ſight of me. At length ſhe comes up cloſe to me, and turning me about, ſaid, *Indeed, you take too much pains, you are too laborious; fair and ſoftly; there is a great while to night yet: deſiſt a little; I muſt have a word with you.* Hearing this, I preſumed to look in her face, and was overjoyed; for from thence I received a moſt alluring ſmile, in ſtead of a killing frown. This re-armed me with confidence, compelling from me theſe expreſſions.

Moſt reſpectful Miſtreſs, I do with ſhame confeſs my ſelf in a great error: but if you will conſider that the cauſe thereof was inexpliable, I hope you will in

ſome

some measure mitigate my crime. My very Youthfulness speaks my apology. You cannot be ignorant of the fervent heat of young blood, which sometimes boyls beyond its bounds. Besides, the temperature of my Body (being of a Sanguine complexion) did add much fuel to that fire.

She admired to hear me speak in such a Dialect; but laying aside her wonder, she bid me tell her the whole, and what Contract we had concluded. I equivocated in my relation, intending to excuse the *Maids* forwardness, and that I onely designed to surprize her unexpected. This Sophistry of mine did not in the least prevent my *Mistresses* prying wit, and quick understanding, soon searching out the truth, tracing every meander, finding it out at last, though involved in a labyrinth of obscurities. She told me plainly she knew all, though I endeavoured to conceal it, and *desired* me, instead of commands, to withdraw my affectionate thoughts from her, since her resolution was to divorce our persons. Adding moreover, that if I was so amorously inclined, as not content without a Female Object to exercise my passion on, I should elect such a one, whose merit grounded on *Beauty*, *Birth*, Wealth and power, should command my love, and finally eternize my terrestrial happiness; and so vanisht from me, leaving my cogitations to their operations.

Forty five years had not totally destroy'd her beauty, but there was still remaining the ruines of a good face: Her *Birth*, though from a high extraction, had little influence over me, had not her Wealth (which she had at her own disposal) whil-

pered

pered in my ear more then a common felicity. Her last words left a deep impression on my imagination, which were not so enigmatically delivered, but that I could easily interpret them advantagiously enough to my purpose. I resolved within my self to acquiesce, leaving this affair to time to bring it to perfection.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

What devices he found out to Cheat his Master; and what ways he had to spend it lavishly, as unseasonable hours, on Wine, Wenches, &c.

THe time being come again, for the meeting my ſnipping Brethren, I went prepar'd with what I could conveniently carry with me. Seeing me come well fraught, my Merchants preſently clapt me aboard, reſolving not to let my commodities lie long on my hands, our truck was ſoon agreed on to our mutual contents. Then like true ſons of *Bacchus*, we bucculed about, wiſhing him that pledged it not in a dark rainy night on a tired Jade, bare ridg'd in a dirty lane, with a pocky Whore behinde him, and his own bones rotten, within nine Miles from an houſe, not knowing one ſtep of his way, nor having one penny in his pocket. This, or the like dreadful execration, made us tumble off whole Boles like ſo many Thimbles-full. Half a dozen of theſe apiece, were a *preludium* to our Supper, which uſually was compoſed of the choiceſt Viands. Neither could we eat, without our Female Conſorts, whom Wine and Muſick waited on. After Supper, we fel again to our old *Bacchanalian* ſport, dancing, or privately treating our Miſtreſſes at a veneral Banquet. When we had drank our ſelves to ſobriety,

and

and satiated our lustful appetites, we betook our selves to our respective habitations, our *Masters* not dreaming of our Night-Revellings. Our own expences were neither valuable nor comparable to what our *Mad* Dames put us to; which were so great (though they made me rack my invention to supply their pretended necessities) that all my various endeavours could not answer their expectations. I had had taken my Gentlewoman a Chamber, for which I paid three shillings a week, and upon the bare promise of a Whore, that she would prove constant to me, I allowed her a weekly pension besides; I never came to receive a private favour, but I must return her for it some special and particular courtesie; as a Scarf, an Hood, a Ring, a Whisk, or rich Lace for her Smock. If I failed at any time of paying my promised Tribute, I should be severely check'd, nay, sometimes threatned, That I had undone her; she refusing, for my sake, many eminent Matches; that she saw her self meerly deluded, and therefore would endure it no longer; telling my Master our whole proceedings. If I had performed the main, and not presented her when I came with some other gratuity, as a work of Supererrogation, she would deride my Courtship, telling me, *I was an empty fellow, that I bestowed my favours on others, and that made me so sparing to her.* When she thought she had sufficiently netled me, (fearing to strain my passion too high) then a little comply, clapping me on the cheeks, (and clapt me somewhere else too after) calling me, Snock-fac'd Rogue: come hither Sirrah, I know what you would have, I'le save your longing. Such sweetned words soon overpowred my sourness; and notwithstanding

my

my intended hardneſs, I could not forbear melting in her Arms. We durſt not take much time in dalliance, my duty calling me home; but I regarded not that ſo much as to preſerve my Maſters good opinion of me. Mine, and my Females extravagancies, made me invent as many ways to cheat, as we had ways to ſpend what was this way gotten. If I heard any friend ſay, they muſt buy a Gown, I had my Mercer ready for that purpoſe; if a Suit and Cloak, my Draper, and the like: Sometimes telling my friend, That I was acquainted with one, that would ſell me a far cheaper penny worth then any one elſe; other times, that ſuch an one owed me ſome moneys, and that this way I could both pleaſure my friend, and hedge in mine own moneys. Though I drove a great trade this way, receiving ſtill ready caſh, yet this would not do alone. As an aſſiſtance I guelded the money-box every day, receiving my part firſt, before my Maſter ſhould take his, which uſually he did every night, putting it into his Till. I could not ſleep, for thinking how I might be intimately acquainted with the inwards of this ſame Till. Several projects I made tryal of, but none ſuited my purpoſe ſo well, as a Barbers pair of Curling-irons. I got a File from a Smith, and to work I went with my Curling-irons, filing them to ſlip in eaſily, and to turn round. The firſt Eſſay *I* made thereof, had like to have put me into an Extaſie for joy. *I* laid them upon their edge, opened them wide, *I* pinched the money below; holding faſt, *I* turned them on their ſide, and ſo drew up the money to the mouth of the Scotch: now, becauſe there was many times ſo much, that it would not come through, with a knife *I* would ſlide

away

away piece after piece, till I had fitted the money to the narrowneſs of the paſſage. I ſeldom brought up at a time leſs then three ſhillings, a good draught, not ceaſing till I had gotten twenty or thirty ſhillings at a time, or more, according to the quantity of the ſtock. Finding my Engine act according to my deſires, I could not be content without congratulating my ſucceſs. My Maſter was ſeldom at home, wherefore I askt my Miſtreſs to go out for an hour, promiſing her not to ſtay beyond my limited time: She conſented, and I overjoyed, pickt up a Rambler or two, and away we went to honeſt *Ralph*. Being glad to ſee us, planted us in a convenient room fit for his purpoſe. There was never a Pint he ſcored at the Bar, but he had a Quart-Bottle in his Breeches for it. They all wondred to ſee me ſo frollick, but I thought it wiſdom to conceal the depth of my practice from them.

After we had drank very ſmartly, I came home, tranſgreſſing but a little beyond my time. My Miſtreſs was very well pleaſed, telling me, *I ſhould have leave another time, ſince I was ſo punctual.* Thoſe Bottles of Sack we drank, ran perpetually in my minde; for it was the very flower of Wine. In the commemoration of my Friends courteſie, and the goodneſs of that Liquor, I gave my contemplative fancy leave to characteriſe a Bottle of Canary, thus.

THE

THE CHARACTER OF A Bottle of *Canary*.

HE is a Gentleman I assure you well extracted, which once lived like a Salamander in the midst of the flames, and had he not been burnt, he had never proved sound. He seems a Prodigy: For that which we live by, decays him; hating Air, as *Bacchus* hates small Beer. He will lie still if you smother him, and is never so well, as when his breath is stopt. Bury him, and you make him quicker. As for his habit, it is ever plain, yet neat: Though Nobly born, he scorns not to wear a Green Coat, with a badge on it; and you cannot injure him worse than to pick a hole in his Coat. Though he wears for the most part one sort of Garb, yet he is never out of fashion, acceptable to the best of company, not regarding his outward dress, but valuing his inward worth: However, his Suit is made of admirable Stuff, for his outside never grows bearer, and his Linings are the fresher for wearing. So choice he is in his Cloathing, that he rather chuseth to have his brains knockt out, then to have a rent in his Garment. He wears an *a la mode* Hat, as light (and almost as little) as a Shittle-cock, which he puts off to none; but like the Quaker when brought be-

before a Magistrate, hath it taken off for him.

As for his Pedegree, I know not how to derive it; for he hath had in him, the best and purest of the *French* Blood, but will now acknowledge his race onely from the *Spaniard*, whom he imitates, being stately, and standing always upright; treads for the most part on Carpets, and never stirs abroad but when he is carried; yet full of activity. If he runs fast and long, the more wind he gets. If he chance to fall, which is seldom, for many looks to him; he will be extreamly moved, yet (contrary to all men) the fuller his belly is, the less hurt he receives. His credit is large, never paying for what he wears, running on the score perpetually; his conditions are a riddle; there is in him pure vertue, and notorious vice; the quintescence of love, and the venome of hatred. He is the beginning and the end of a thousand quarrels in an year. Yet a very Coward, for he suffers any to take him by the ear, and never broke any ones pate, but when company was by. He is very facetious in society, and will spend himself freely to the last drop, if a Ladies soft and warm hand will raise him. He is a brisk Spark, and therefore Courtiers adore him; he is smooth in his expression, and therefore Ladies delights in him; he is fill'd with nimble fancies, therefore the Wits frequent him, exhausting his radical moysture to distil it into Poetical Raptures; for conceits never run faster from the Limbick of their brain, then when this Gentleman adds fewel to the Furnace: he whets wit, yet dulls it; creates new fancies, and stupifies. Gives the Orator a fluent tongue, and mutes him speechless: gives a Poet

feet

feet till he cannot go. And as he helps *Ministers* to Preach, ſo he likewiſe ſilenceth more then the Biſhops. He hath a great many tricks in him: He will make a Falkner fly high within doors: *Make*, a Huntſman catch a Fox by the fire ſide. Whatever he holds, is made good; and unleſs you mind him well, much good matter that falls from him, may be loſt: for he is often fluent beyond meaſure. All Tongues Court him, and thoſe that look narrowly unto him, ſhall find him no dry Fellow. The truth is, he is top profound for ſhallow brains to meddle with him: He will pour out quaint expreſſions and hard words ſo thick, that the beſt Scholars are glad at laſt to give him ſomething to ſtop his mouth: yet hold him up fairly, and you may get all he hath out of him. He is exceſsively belov'd, and reliſhes all Company, being pleaſant, and full of admirable humours. He is inwardly acquainted with the Lord *Mayor* and Aldermen, and incorporateth with their Wives daily. His kiſſes are ſo ſweet, that they lick their lips after him; and though his breath be ſtrong, yet 'tis not offenſive. He is a true *Good-Fellow*, drinking till he hath no eyes to ſee with: Good Liquor is his Life and Soul, and he is never muſty but for want of it. He will drink till he be fill'd up to the very throat, and gape whileſt others put it in. He will bear as much Sack as any man in *England* of his bulk, yet he will be ſoon drunk in Company: but if you will give him leave to vomit, he will take his Liquor, and drink freſh, till all the Company be forc'd to leave him. Drinking is his hourly exerciſe, ſeldom lying out of a Tavern. He is the main Upholder of Club-meeting, without fear of being

broke. He picks mens Pockets, yet is never made more reckoning of then by such persons. As for his Estate, I can only say this, That all he hath he carries about him; yet generally he is reputed rich: What he hath, he holds upon courtesie; but what he gives others, it is held *in Capite*. What he possesseth, is commonly upon Sale; yet more for plenty, then for want; and if you can purchase him, you purchase all.

I could never endure Idleness, I was ever in action; I thought it better *male agere quam nihil agere*; my brains or hands were continually working. By this time our *Maid* found her self with Child: which news had like to have deprived me of my understanding: but knowing that Vexation never remedies, but rather adds trouble, I was resolved to bear it patiently, and study some means to preserve her and my Credit. I framed a Letter as from her Father, desiring her to come down into the Country speedily, if she intended to see him alive; and according as we had laid the Plot, she she's it her *Mistress*, desiring her leave to shew her duty to her dying Father. Our *Mistress* most willingly consented thereunto, as knowing that there was more then ordinary love between us; the *Maid* had staid as long as possibly she might without discovery, Lacing her self very streight, and keeping down her belly with three Busks: but now she made haste to rub off. I had provided a *Midwife* that should be her Bawd too: but this could not be done without extraordinary cost. After her Delivery, I found the keeping of her and the Childe very expensive: then did I begin to consider what a

vast

vast charge, and how many various troubles this momentary lecherous pleasure draws upon a man: how furiously he is upon the onset, and how quickly satisfied, loathing that Object he a little before longed for. Well, I bethought my self how to be rid both of Cow and Calf. I told her I would get together what moneys I could, and so marry her, upon this condition she would be willing to travel with me whither I went, which I knew was her onely desire: I informed her of my intention to go for *Virginia*; and the reasons that introduced me thereunto.

First, her disgrace would not be known there: Next, my *Master* could have no power over me; insisting further on the pleasantness of that continent, and the plenty of every thing, *&c.*

She assented to all I propounded, relying her self solely on me to dispose of her as I pleased. To palliate my design, I went with her to *Gravesend*, pretending as if I was then going with her, for no other end but to clear my self from her there; knowing that after she had past that examination or search, she would meet with no more. Being aboard, I suddenly seemed to have forgot somerhing ashore; whereupon I told her I would return to her instantly. I got into the Boat, and immediately after the Ship weighed her Anchor, she was instantly under Sail; I confess notwithstanding the Devil had at that time the total possession of me; yet I was much troubled at what I had done so hard-heartedly and cruelly. A flood of tears had so overwhelmed my sight, that I could not discern the Ship in which she was: so sensible I was of the wickedness of this Fact, that, *Dido* like, I could have thrown my self into the Sea

after her, had not a good Woman, whose Husband was in the same Ship, prevented me. Observing my tears *'Tis probable, Young Man*, (said she) *you have lately taken your leave of some dearly beloved Friend; and I guess, by your earnest looking after yond Ship under Sail, that the person was in her.* I told her it was a truth. *My Husband is in the same Vessel* (said she) *and therefore I have as much cause to grieve as you. Come, be of good comfort, Man, Friends must part, and it is better to part here then at the Gallows. Go along with me, and we will wash down sorrow, and with a Glass of neat Canary, antidote our hearts against any thing that may disturb it.*

With that I lookt intentively in her face, and found it correspondent with a jolly temper. An Eye black and piercing: an Ey-brow black also: and each as big as a mans thumb comparatively: a sign that never fails to denote that Woman capable of giving a man the greatest delectation in Copulation. She was every way compleatly handsome. and suitable to the desires of the most curious Critick in Love-affairs. I thought it a shame to deny so kind a proffer, and a Crime in Youth unpardonable not to embrace that opportunity, that shall lead him by the hand into *Venus* her Bed-chamber. With that I addrest my self to her, (and afterwards undrest together) declaring that the force of her Rhetorick, assisted by her external, beautiful, and altogether lovely form, had forced me to become her Proselyte, her absolutely Devoted Convert, and would prostrate my will to be guided by hers and her command. With that we concluded to solace our selves at the next Tavern. I applied my self to my old way of insinuation, which soon melted her,

so

so that I saw I might when I pleased stamp Loves impression on her.

There was not any thing wanting that might please our senses. Fearing least that Oven I had heated might cool, I made ready my Batch: for such things are *Soon cold, soon hot.* Delays in Love-affairs are dangerous: Women love not to be too long Tantaliz'd; there is a certain critical time to know their inclination; which if you punctually observe, you shall assuredly reap the fruits of your desires; if not, you may perpetually wait, but never enjoy the like opportunity. Wherefore the Iron glowing hot, I thought good to strike, giving her a taste for liking: being not satisfied, I was forc'd to stay her stomack till Supper. Men after such enjoyments are commonly stupified, dull, heavy, melancholly or sleepy: whereas she on the contrary was nothing but Air, agil, pleasant, nimble, and full of action. I cannot much wonder at it: for you know the Wheels of a Jack never move more merrily, then when they have been well oyled. To enliven my spirits, she sent for a noise of Musick, ordering them to play in the next Room, because they should not be eye-witnesses of our dalliances: we could not but now and then bear a part with them, our Prick-song keeping time with their Instrumental Harmony. Having satiated all our Senses, we began to think of some repose, agreeing before to lie in two Chambers contiguous to each other; which were accordingly provided. As soon as I thought all the Houshold were in bed, I repaired to my Mistress, who eagerly expected my coming; approaching the Bed-side, she clasp'd me in her arms so strongly, that I thought she would have

squeezed the very marrow out of my bones. Little sleep we enjoyed that night, she not suffering me to rest: As soon as day broke, I arose, bespeaking a fat Capon swadled with Sassages, and a Quart of Butter'd Sack, which might repair decayed strength, I got all ready by the time of her rising, applauding my industry and care of her, we fell to it, interlining every bit with a Glass of Canary. She told me she would never part whilest she had a penny left, having about her some Thirty Pieces of Gold. *Well*, (said I) *my Dear, since it is thy resolution, a March; but let me be Steward*: which she agreed unto, delivering into my hands what Gold she had. For two or three hours I shewed my self very officious in my place; but considering that when this money was spent, we should not know what to do, I thought it was better for one to want then two; besides I had lately surfeited on a Medler, and therefore my stomack nauseated the very thoughts thereof. I had feed the Drawer to bring me word just as the *Gravesend* Barge was going off, which accordingly he did by a private sign concluded betwixt us. I had just so much time below to write here these lines instead of a solemn leave taking, leaving them with the Drawer to present her, and so went aboard.

Madam,

By this you'll hear I'm gone and wonder much
That I should go, not taking t'other touch:
Inverted 'tis all one; for hence you know
When we both met, it was but touch and go.
I was so fierce at first, I soon was spent;
Storms and high winds are never permanent:
Yet for all this, I would have dreign'd your Fen.
Could this same work have been perform'd by men.

I

Y'shining on the enterprize, gave me a
From Gold will fit me for another boat.
Hence be more wise; your fond belief doth shew,
That you may lose your hidden treasure too.

Arriving at *Billingsgate*, I went streight to a Tavern, where I had an interest with the Drawer; resolving there to consult seriously with my self what course to follow, being as yet unresolved what to do. After I had rais'd my dull'd spirits with a glass or two, I concluded to hazard my Masters good opinion, nay, and my Mistresses affection too; which though at that present it onely smoak'd, I might easily divine that in process of time it would burst forth into a flame. Being before confined to my Masters time, I began to consider what an excellent thing Liberty was, equally estimable with Health; which two, though they are the greatest and most precious gifts, (next our Redemption) the Creator of the world hath bestowed on Mankind, yet we poor Mortals, value them not, till we are sensible of their want by being deprived of them. This is an infallible *Maxime*, *That the deprivation of a thing shall be so much evil, as the possession thereof is good.* Now if Liberty be such an excellent and delectable thing when enjoyed, how miserable are those that want it?

Having *Moneys* in my Pocket, I concluded to experiment the enjoyment thereof, and to participate of such delights the nature of young men is most inclinable to. Now *Man* being a sociable Creature, I thought I should reap but little satisfaction to my self in the expence of my moneys, without an Associate: wherefore I sent to an Appren-

tice of my intimate acquaintance contemporary with me, and who had often prompted me to ramble with him. This Lad was his *Masters* Casheer, which I knew would much assist my design. I made him acquainted with my intention of trying the world: Though it had been formerly his own motion, yet he seemed at the first something startled; but all his doubts I resolved, adding moreover, That to have our wills enslaved to other mens, was a thing insupportable, since that we were as well as they, created free Denizens of this world. I had no great occasion to make use of many Arguments to this purpose, for his own inclination was sufficient to perswade him. The result of our discourse was a firm resolution to become two Knights-errant. I advised him forthwith to go home, and bring with him what Cash he had in his possession: which he readily performed, and indeed more then I could expect, being 200*l.* the Fates having so decreed to favour this our first bold exploit, as a tryal of what we durst attempt.

CHAP. X.

How he frequented Bawdy-Houses; what exploits he committed in them: The Character of a Bawd, a Whore, a Pimp, and a Trapan: Their manner of living, with a Detection of their wicked lives and conversations.

BEing full Fraught with Money, we undertook our Progress, promising to our selves all delight imaginable, but not considering what the effect would be. We frequented all places of pleasure, but among the cheif, we ranked *Brothel-houses*, which were our Repositaries. We seldom were seen in the streets by day, for fear of discovery, confining our selves close prisoners to some *Bubbing-house*: At night (like such as closely delighted in deeds of darkness) we would sometimes flutter abroad. Our pastime was to hire Coaches to any pretended place, and when we came near it, to make our escape. One time leaping out of the Boot, my Cloak chanced to tangle in the spokes of the wheel, which turning so, drew it in: that for this fact, I had liked to have been executed on the wheel, had I not speedily unbuttoned my cloak: I was loath to bid the Coach-man stop, thinking I should have it at last, I ran Lacque-like a long way, but all

my

my endeavors to shift it, proved ineffectual; so that at length I was forced to cry out, *Hold Coachman*. The Coachman coming out of his Box, soon perceived the fallacy, and straightways demanded his money, before he would untangle my Cloak, which I was compelled to give him. Delivering me my Cloak, he told me, *I had paid him, but he had not paid me for my attendance on him*: And said moreover, *That my Cloak would not look like a Livery, unless it were laced; and with that, with his whip, lasht me well-favouredly*. Another sort of Pastime we used, was to kick any old Watchmans Lanthorn about the street; but we had worse success with this then the former. Assoon as we had done this manful act, we betook our selves to flight, still escaping, till one time we mistook a young lusty nimble fellow, for an old, decrepid, dim-sighted old man, serving him as we had done the rest; but he was a little to quick footed, overtaking us, surprized us; and as he was carrying us before the Constable, we met with the Grand Round, who, without much examination, committed us as Rats to the Counter. The chiefest thing that troubled us, was the apprehension of our Masters knowing where we were. But we resolved to drownd that care: We had not been there long, before other Rats, Male and Female, were brought in to bear us company. Some of the men were all bloody, and their Mobs, Scarfs, and Hoods all rent, and none of them sober; Damning and sinking were the constant flourishes of their discourse, calling for drink was the Argument they held, and roaring in disconsonate notes was their Harmony. Though I was my self compassionately wicked, yet I blessed my God I had not arrived

sived to that height, these superlative Villains had arrained to. Being in their company, I thought my self in the Suburbs, or on the confines of Hell. Sin, if it be dressed up in specious pretences, may be entertained as a companion; but when it appears in its own shape, it cannot but strike horror into the Soul of any, though desperate, if not stupified. Look upon a Prison as in it self, and it may be fitly termed a temporary Hell. For as the other is a receptacle for damned Souls, the Gates thereof standing always wide open: So this refuseth the reception of none, though never so wicked a miscreant. Though my durance in this place was but short, yet I could not but take some observations, imploying from thence the faculties of my Soul, to draw up the definition of a Prison. Hell is a very proper denomination for it, since it is a place composed of nothing but disorder and confusion; a Land of darkness; inhabited by calamity, horror, misery, and confusion; a bottomless Pit of fraud, violence, and stench. A Prison is the Banishment of Courtesie, the Centre of Infamy and Disparagement, the Destruction of good Wits, the Treasure of Despair, the Fining-Pot of Friendship, a Den of Deceivers, a Forrest of Ravenous Beasts. Here you may see one Weeping, another Singing; one Sleeping, another Swearing; every one variously imployed; one Eating in a corner, and another Pissing just by him; another Lowsing himself between both; it may be heretofore a Military man, and therefore loath to forget his Art, but rather exercising it in the killing of his bodily enemies, bearing the blood on his nail, as the Trophies of his victory. My stay was here so short, that I can-

not

not insist upon particulars, referring you to its more ample description in another place. The next day paying our Fees, and receiving some checks, with good admonitions from the Justice, we were discharged. This misfortune made us not a jot more cautious, but assoon as we were at liberty, we went upon the sent to Mother *Cr*--formerly famous for the Citizens wives that frequented her house; and still rides Admiral of all the rest of her Function about the Town. The truth of it is, of all the Bawds I know, she merits most, having an house fit for the accommodation of the best: As for her walking Utensils, they are composed of refined mettal, always neatly kept; which, because they are not used upon all slight occasions, they appear the more delectable to the eye. Assoon as we had entered the door, I could hear a ruffling of Silks in sundry places: I conceive it was their policy, by seeming modesty, to set a greater edge on our appetites. We were conducted into a large handsome Room, bottles of Wine were brought up, both Spanish and French, with Salt meats to relish the Pallate, though we gave no order for them: But, it seems, it was the custom of the house, a chargeable one, but without a piece spending, you shall know little of their practices. At length, up came the old Matron, after the performance of our Devoir, she seats her self by me, and began to be impudently acquainted, chucking me under the chin, calling me her *Son Smock-face*. Having well warmed our selves with Wine, knowing that our bloods began to heat. *Well*, said she, *I guess at the intent of your coming hither, neither shall you go away unsatisfied. Nature will have its course, and if in Youth*

it

it be ſtopt, it will but, Torrent-like, flow with the greater impetuoſity. Come, I ſee by your countenances, that ye were born ſons of mirth and pleaſure, ſhew then what ſtock ye came of: If you want Subjects to exerciſe your parts on, we'll have more Wine; and when ye are inflamed, ye ſhall have the benefit of a Cooler. With that ſhe leaves us; but another of the ſame Sex, though three degrees different in age, ſupplied her place. At firſt view I ſeemed very well pleaſed; handſome ſhe was, and very proportionable, but withal ſo impudent, that I was antidoted againſt lechery. *Iſta femina quæ limites verecundiæ ſemel exceſſerit, oportet illam eſſe graviter impudentem.* If once a woman paſs the bounds of Shamefac'dneſs, ſhe will ſeldom ſtop till ſhe hath arrived to the heighth of Impudence. I muſt needs deal ingeniouſly, the Needle of my Microcoſm was toucht by Loves Loadſtone, and pointed directly to its proper centre: but her over-much willingneſs to proſtitute her ſelf to my deſires, made too large a variation in the Magnet. Laying aſide Metaphors drawn from terms of Art, if I might have had an hundred pounds I could not cauſe an erection. She did ſpit in her hand to make it moiſt, having been drawn dry, the Pole being never out of the Well; and when ſhe kiſt me, it was open-mouth'd, interpoſing her tongue, which proclaimed her an ancient Practitioner. I found her body the very Tilted Lees of Pleaſure; taſte her, ſhe is dead, and falls upon the Pallate. Though ſhe had baited her deſires with a million of proſtitute countenances and enticements, yet I lookt upon her rather a Companion for an Hoſpital, and ſtood rather in need of a Chyrurgeons acquaintance then mine. My Friend

had

had nibbled at the bait; but when I heard them capitulating about the price of her Commodity, I thought she wanted a Fee for the Doctor. Well, had she not overtraded, she had not broke so soon; for her trade is opposite to all others: For she did set up without credit, and her too much customers undid her; and so let her go, without either shame or hope of repentance.

We desired to see another: 'Tis variety that Man cheifly takes delight in: One constant sort of Food, without participating of any other, though Manna, will cause the stomack to long for the Flesh-pots. Neither can the crime be greater in the enjoyment of divers persons, then one alone, provided Matrimony make not the Act Legitimate: For illustration thereof, take these lines.

Born under some ill Planet, or accurst,
Is he that loves one single Whore:
Who with one draught can always quench his thirst,
Ty'd to one Mistress, and no more.

To Swive a thousand Whores makes no more crimes,
Then 't doth to Swive one Whore a thousand times.

This nauseating thing being removed, up came one of *Venus* her chief Darlings, excellent Flesh! and she her self the Cook that dresst it, spending most of her day time about it, that she might with the better appetite be tasted at night. Finding no exceptions in this, I was impatient till I had consummated my desires, with drawing into another room. To heighten my thoughts, she declared to me her Birth and Education; that as the one was well extracted,

trusted, the other had occasioned much cost and expence. She further insisted, that it was not usual for her to admit of any to her embraces, but such whose long acquaintance had gained her affection. I offered her a Crown, which she refused with indignation, telling me, that she was not yet reduced to so low a condition, as to become so poor a Mercenary Prostitute. At last, with much persuasion, I fastned on her an half piece, and so striving with her (she onely seeming averse) I accomplisht my ends. I had not fully performed my work, but in came a fellow, whose very face would have enlightned the room, though in the darkest night: For indeed, it appeared to me a Blazing Comet, and his Nose (for miraculously he had preserved it) was the bushy Tail. Laying his hand on his Sword, he looked fiercer then a *Spanish Don* insulting over an *Indian Slave*. The bulk of his Body began to heave like an Earthquake, whilst his mouth, *Etna* like, belche out all manner of Sulphurous Oaths, which roared so loud, as if his belly had contained a barrel of Gun-powder, and the Linstock of his Nose had fired it. His courteous Salutation to me, was, *How darest thou Son of a whore presume in this nature to dishonor me, in the abusing of my wife, without the expectation of an immediate annihilation or dissipation into Atomes? But I have something here shall tame thy insolence, and now I am resolved to let thy blood abroach.* With that he seemed to make a pass at me: Now I, imagining that he really intended to do what he pretended, for the safe-guard of my life, I took up a Joynt-stool, and received his point in the seat, and following it home, tumbled him down the stairs, and not being

being able to recover my self, fell with him. My Comrade came running down at the noise to assist me, but he seeing me rather make use of my heels then hands, followed my example, and so built a Sconce, leaving the old Bawd to condole her great loss, for the reckoning was very considerable.

Now because I have often met with these *Hectors* or *Trapanning Villains*, I think it will not be unsuitable to this present Discourse, to insert their Character.

THE CHARACTER OF

An *Hector* or *Trapan*.

A Bawdy-house is his Cloyster, where he constantly says his Mattins. He is an Whores Protector, pretending himself more valiant then any of the ancient *Heroes*, thereby thinking to take off the suspition of a Coward from himself: For the opinion of Valor is a good protection to those that dare not use it. His frequent drawing his Sword upon any slight occasion, makes the ignorant suppose him valiant, whereas he durst not do it, but when he is confident no danger will ensue thereon. He never strikes any, but such he is sure will not return his blows. In Company he is wonderful exceptious and cholerick, thinking in the fray some

booty

booty may be obtained: his anger never swells higher then when men are loth to give him any occasion; but the onely way to pacifie him, is to beat him soundly. The hotter you grow, the milder he is, protesting he alwayes honoured you. The more you abuse him, the more he seems to love you: if he chance to be quarrelsome, you may threaten him into a quiet temper. Every man is his Master that dares beat him, and every one dares that knows him, and he that dares do this, is the onely man can do much with him. Yet if he knows a Coward, he will purposely fall out with him, to get Courtesies from him, and so be brib'd into a reconcilement. Yet I cannot say but that he may fight, (if with great advantage) being so acccustomed to the sight of drawn Swords, which probably may infuse something of conceit into him; which he so magnifies by his own good opinion, that he would have people believe that the Mole-hill of his Prowess is no less then a Mountain. This little he hath, he is no Niggard in displaying, resembling some Apothecaries Shops, full of Pots, though little contain'd in them. His Estate lies in Contrivancies; and though other Landlords have but four Quarter-dayes he hath three hundred sixty and odd to receive the fruits of his Stratagems: He is well skill'd in Cards and Dice, which help him to cheat young Gulls newly come to Town; and the reason he usually gives for it, is, *A Woodcock must be pluckt ere he be dresst*. If that will not do, he carries him to one of his mistresses, and so both joyn to plume this Fowl: if there be not ready money to answer expectation, a Bond of considerable value shall serve turn, attested by two shall swear any thing for half

a Crown. No man puts his brain to more use then he; for his life is a daily invention, and each meal a mear stratagem. He hath an excellent memory for his acquaintance; if there ever past but an *How do you?* between him and another, it shall serve seven years hence for an embrace, and that for money. Out of his abundance of joy to see you, offers a Pottle of Wine; and in requital of his kindness, can do no less then make you pay for it: whilst you are drawing money, he fumbles in his Pockets, (as School-boyes with their points, being about to be whipt) till the Reckoning be paid, and, saies *It must not be so*, yet is easily perswaded to it; and then cryes, *Gentlemen, you force me to incivility.* When his Whores cannot supply him, he borrowes of any that will lend him ought; of this man a shilling, and of another as much; which some lend him, not out of hope to be repay'd, but that he will never trouble them again. If he finds a good look from any, he will haunt him so long, till he force a good Nature to the necessity of a quarrel. He loves his Friend as one doth his Cloak, that hath but one, and knows not how to get another; he will be sure to wear him thread-bare ere he forsake him. Men shun him at last as an infection; nay his old Companions, his Cloaths, that have hung upon him so long, at length fall off too. His prayer in the morning is, That his Cheats may take effect that day, if not; that he may be drunk before night. He sleeps with a Tobacco-pipe in his mouth, and he dreames of nothing but Villany. If any mischief escapes him, it was not his fault, for he lay as fair for it as he could. He dares not enter into a serious thought, lest he hang himself; but if such melancholy seize him, the

the Drink is his refuge, and Drunkenness cures him. Lastly, he commonly dies like a Malefactor on the Gallows, like *Hercules* with fire in his bones. When hang'd, if begg'd for an Anatomy, it would serve to convert Tobacco-smokers from delighting in the excess thereof: for they will finde the funnel of his body, I mean his throat, furr'd and choakt up.

Being freed from danger, we rejoyc'd exceedingly that we thus so narrowly escaped, resolving to house our selves in the next Bubbing-place we came to, that we might talk freely of this rencounter. Coming into the Kitchin, I was not a little amazed at the sight of a thing sitting in a Chair by the fire-side, with a Pipe of Tobacco in its mouth, and a Quarter of strong-waters by its side. This Tun of Flesh resembled an Elephant for the bigness of her waste, had there been the least appearance of a Tooth: A Nose she had (which with all wonder be it spoken) so long, as that it was a fit resemblance of the Elephants Proboscis or Trunk. But as I said before, her Teeth were faln out; and as loving Neighbors to reconcile them, her Chin and Nose resolved to meet about it. She bid us Welcom as well as she could speak. Go, I think she could not: but opening her mouth, Lord what strong imaginations my fancy suggested to me! Me thought I saw Hell gaping to devour me: and within that bottomless Concave, I could discern infinit numbers of Souls whose damnation she was accessary to; and coming somewhat too near her, I imagined her breath was bituminous and smelt of Brimston. She might fitly be compared to an old Coal that hath been well

burnt, that with the least spark will rekindle and fire any thing near it. But her fittest likeness is the Devil, her *Envy* running parallel with his. All that the Devil endeavours is to bring mankind into the same state, and a Bawds crime is to make all fair women like her: now because their youth perhaps will not admit of it so soon, she hurries them on to it by degrees. I lookt about her-house very inquisitively, but I could not judge her Moveables (setting aside her quick Cattle) to be worth an Inventory. Her bedding I doubt me too is infectious, few coming near it but they are presently taken with a fit of the falling sickness. This old Beldame, being loth to put her throat to the trouble of calling her white Devils about her, had got a Whistle, on which she used several Notes, which Musical language her Girls understood very well. We call'd for drink; the old Bawd replyed she would send for some, thought she had it not in the house: this was to be sure of our Moneys. Herein in I observed their temperance, not suffering us to have too much measuee. Wenches we had plentifully, one more especially I took notice of, to have the Swarthiest skin I have seen English born, on whom an ordinary fellow was very sweet. When I saw my opportunity, I aske him, (craving his excuse) *What Trade he was?* Pat as I would have it, he answered me, *That he was a Tanner. I concluded so, Sir*, (said I) *by your dressing of that Calfs-skin there.* This Dull-headed fool apprehended me not, but began to be angry, telling me, *His Trade was a good Trade, and I need not undervalue it*: I told him, *I did not, since there was some analogy between my Trade and his. Why what Trade are you?* said he, *I may ask you a question as well as*

you

you me.) I replyed, *That I was a Cuckold-maker. How can that be like my Profession?* quoth he. *In this,* said I, *you dress the Skins, and I trim the Horns.* The Bawd at this fell into such an extream fit of laughter, that down fell her Pipe, and up came the Strong-waters that she had swallowed; that was not all, but having not her retentive faculty, she let flie; surely she was overcharged, which made her recoyl, and so blew out her breech-pin. She was forced to leave us, and about an hour after returned; how swee I cannot tell you. We fell into discourse again: I askt her, *How long she had liv'd in this house;* *Two years,* (said she) *a longer time then any house I have lived in this twenty years*: with that I concluded she was in fee with the Justices Clerk. My stomach being waterish, I would needs have some Eggs and Bacon: but Lord, what an Agony the hearing thereof put the Bawd in! desiring me to desist, for she should die at the sight of them. I askt her the reason: *O,* said she, *it puts me in mind of one* Shrove-tuesday *especially, on which the Apprentices pull'd down my house; and sick, sick as I was, pull'd me away violently from a caudle I had prepared to comfort me: But they gave me one with a Pox to them, and the Devils Dam take the rotten Eggs in it, with which I thought they would have pelted out my brains, after they had dragg'd me sufficiently, & worried me (as a Mastiff would a cat) till they were weary of the sport, fearing I should catch cold, they out of pity covered me warm in a Bogg-house. But the worst was, after this kind usage, I was to go through a long Street before I could come to an acquaintance of mine wherein I could safely secure my self from the out-rage of these Hellhounds. All along as I went a thousand Dogs barkt at me, the Street was*

filled with people looking and laughing at my sad disaster, but none daring to come near me. They say, I left so strong a scent behind me, that several of the Inhabitants left their dwellings upon it, and that the strong savour remained in that place above six dayes. I seemed to pity her much, promising to visit her often; and so we left her.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

What a Trick he ſerved his Comrade; how himſelf was Trapand; his own Cloaths taken from him; the Bawd out of pretended pity, inveſt him with an old petticoat and waſtecoat; his admittance into a Boarding-School; his getting many of the Gentlewomen with Child; his diſcovery, and his flight.

FRom one Bawdy-houſe to another, was our daily Travel, ſtill finding out ſome variety that might pleaſe us. About the twylight, coming along by a well-built houſe, I ſaw a Gentlewoman richly Attir'd ſtanding at the door, who, as I paſs'd by, very civilly ſaluted me, and ſo withdrew her ſelf: I followed her in, as very well underſtanding the interpretation of ſuch actions. She brought us into a ſpacious Inner-room, and then with much civility and good carriage, invited us to ſit down. She called to her ſervant to bring ſome bottles of Wine, thinking to make us pay dearly for her extraordinary Favours. By our habits ſhe took us for no leſs then perſons of Quality: for we had gallantly accoutred our ſelves; and I thought that Fortune now had deſign'd me her chiefeſt favourite, in throwing this unexpected bleſſing upon me. She cauſed her *Lute* to be brought her, to which ſhe ſung ſo harmonical, that the Muſick of the Sphears, are

no more to be compared to it, then a Scotch Bag-pipe to an Organ. This ſo intoxicated my Comrade with the Wine together, (not but they had a great operation on my ſelf) that he fell faſt asleep, (*alias*, dead drunk.) Glad I was to my very heart of this accident, fearing he might be a Rival in my intention: and to the intent I might remove all Remoras or Impediments that might hinder my ſole enjoyment of this Lady, I conſulted with my ſelf what to do with him; I was not long about it, but ſtreight reſolved to ſend him home to his Maſter. Love to a Woman is ſo forceable, that what will it not do? to ſum up all, make a man betray his Friend. I made my Apology to the Gentlewoman for his incivility, and requeſted the favour to have her ſervant procure me a Porter; whilſt ſhe was gone to execute my deſires, I ſearcht his pockets, and took away all his Gold; for we had converted all our money into that metal which we always maid our *vade mecum*. To ingratiate my ſelf with this Gentlewoman, I acquainted her with my deſign, which ſhe heartily laughed at. I farther deſired of her, that I might have a card and a piece of paper. On the card I wrote a ſuperſcription, and pinn'd it on his back, directing the thing to his Maſter, living in ſuch a place: with the paper, I wrote a Letter to him to this effect,

Sir,

Lately I found your Gooſe upon the way,
I took him up, as one that went aſtray.
To recompence my paines I pull'd his feathers,
Such pretious down will warm me in all weathers,
His fleſh I love not; it belongs to you:
The giblets though I keep, and ſo adieu.

Then

Then giving the Porter instructions, that he should but just put him within the doors and leave the Letter, and so with all speed to come away to prevent examination; he brought me word he had performed my order: what discan's were made hereon, I shall leave the Reader to imagine. By this time I had gained my Mistress with a shower of Gold, which had so far prevailed on her, that she protested she was wholly and solely at my devotion. I would have had her to have gone immediately to bed; but she told me, *There would be time enough before morning to sport in, and that we should be both tyred if we went to bed so soon.* Where to divert our selves we drank and sung together in parts, having indifferent good judgment. Having spun out the time so long till it was time to go to bed, she then conducted me to the Chamber where she intended we should lie. Though she made what haste she could to undress her self, yet me thoughts she was purposely tedious. I commended before, her Vocal and Instrumental Musick, but then I esteemed no other Musick sweeter then the Tag made against her bodice when she was unlacing her self. About two a Clock in the Morning, three or four fellowes rush'd into our Room, at which I awakened, but made as little noise as a *Perdue.* My Mistress leaping out of the Bed they seiz'd on her, gagg'd and bound her; and then opening the two leaves of the Window that was the enterance into the Belcony, they came in all haste to the Bed, and in a trice, had rowl'd up the Bed so close, that they had like to have stifled me in the middle on't, though they dragg'd me in the bed from off the bedsteed, rudely letting me fall on the ground, yet I felt no harm, every part of me was

so

ſo well guarded that in that condition, I might have bid defiance to a Canon Bullet. But when I heard them talk of flinging the *Bed* over the Belcony to their Companions, I thought I ſhould have died inſtantly for fear, knowing I muſt of neceſſity go with it. Whereupon I cryed out as loud as I could, and ſtruggling, I got a little place open, and then I roared like *Phalaris* his Bull. They ſeeming to be ſurprized with my unexpected noiſe, fled faſtning a Rope to the Belcony and ſo ſlid down into the ſtreet. Perceiving they were all gone, I grop'd about the Room, (for it was very dark) ſpeaking very lowly, Where are you Madam, repeating it often: but much wondring I could not hear her anſwer me. As I was feeling round the Room, ſtretching forth my hands, I chanced to run on of my hands againſt her, and one of my fingers into her mouth; I thought my finger had ſtrayed at firſt, miſtaking the place, but ſearching farther, I found teeth, I knew then where about I was, and diſcovered withall, a ſtick in her mouth, keeping it wide open, as Butchers do their Sheep with a Gambrel. But having removed this obſtacle, ſhe beg'd me to unty her hands, which having done, ſhe her ſelf untied her feet: and with that ſhe would have claſped me in her Arms, but I hung an arſe, being ſenſible of the ſtinking condition that the fear had put me in. She was very inquiſitive after my welfare, asking me again and again, *Whether I had received any harm from the Rogues*, I told her no, *Nay, then I care not for my own ſufferings, or what loſs I have ſuſtained by them*, ſaid ſhe, and ſo ſpeedily went for a candle. As I was thinking to apologize for my naſtineſs, up ſhe came with a light, viewing me, and per-

perceiving what a condition I was in, ſhe kept at a diſtance; *Sir* ſaid ſhe, *my fancy ſuggeſts to me, that you now reſemble Nebuchadnezzar when Metamorphozed into a Beaſt, & lying in his own dung; when you ſhall have reaßum'd your humanity, I ſhall preſume to approach nearer to you.* I made my Sirreverence to her, wiſhing they had gagged her breech ſo wide, her guts might have a paſſage through her poſteriors. For I plainly perceiv'd, notwithſtanding all her ſpecious pretences, ſhe was the foundreſs of this Plot. Well, ſhe cauſed water to be brought up, with which I cleanſed my ſelf, and becauſe my ſhirt had too ſtrong a ſent of *Stercus humanum*, ſhe lent me a Smock, which preſaged ere long I ſhould ware Coats too. Having ſhifted my ſelf, I look'd for my Cloaths, but there was a *Non eſt inventus* out againſt them: all my ſearch could afford me not the leaſt comfort; my Miſtreſs ſeemed much diſturbed at my loſs: but when I told her I had loſs'd ſuch a conſiderable quantity of Gold, her ſorrow ſeem'd to be redoubled, and I am ſure her inward joy was increaſed. She comforted me with a great many friendly loving expreſſions, deſiring me to be patient, and indeed neceſſity forc'd me to it. I ask'd her advice what I ſhould do in this naked condition: *There is no remedy,* (ſhe replyed) *you muſt be content to cloath your ſelf in Womans apparel, as for mans I have none to furniſh you withall.* I conſented to it, and preſently ſhe dreſt me up in one of her gowns, with all the appurtenances thereunto belonging. The ſlenderneſs of my body, whiteneſs of skin, beauty and ſmoothneſs of face (having no hairs thereon) added a ſuitableneſs to my garb. I muſt ingeniouſly confeſs, when I conſulted with a Look-

ing

ing-glass, I thought the transmutation of Sexes had been verified in me; but when I walked, I found something pendulous. I thought it folly to tax her for my misfortune, knowing how little it would advantage me. The time was come I was to take my leave of her, going to salute her, I committed a foul mistake, indeavouring to pull off my hood instead of my hat, and making a Leg (as the vulgar term is) in stead of a Curchy; but she advising me to rectifie that mistake for the time to come, we bid each other adieu. In this disguize I traversed the streets, it being almost impossible for any to discover me, my voice being so effeminate, that I was confident that would never betray me. Finding a Bill on a door, I knocked, desiring to see what Lodgings they had; I was very civilly intreated to come in, and was shown several Rooms with much respect, for my female habit was very gallant, and so it had need, for it cost me dearer then so much cloath of Gold. I pitch'd at last upon a Chamber extraordinary well furnished, I never scrupled the price, (because they should look on me as a person of Quality) but agreed to my *Landlords* own terms. I told him I was lately come out of the Country, and that my Trunks were not yet arriv'd, with a great many more fictions to prevent suspition. I onely took Sanctuary in this place, for no longer time then I could contrive away to dispose of my self. There was a young Gentleman that lay in the house, and took special notice of me as soon as I entred it and as he told me next day, was overjoyed that I had determined to be a *Lodger* there. This young *Bravo* (which had more money then wit) had prepared a Banquet for me, and requested

the

the favour of me, that it and himself might be received into my Chamber, I alleadged I could not do it in point of honour, and therefore desired to be excused; but he prest me so far (getting also his Landlady to intercede for him, that at last (though with much seeming unwillingness (I condescended thereunto. Very merry they were, but I thought it prudence to be reserv'd. My Amorist so gazed on me, that I thought he would have devoured me with his eyes, kissing me sometimes, which had lik'd to have made me disgorge my stomack in his face. For in my opinion, it is very unnaturall, nay loath-some, for one man to kiss another, though customary I know it is; yet I look on such as use it, inclining to *Sodomy*. In three dayes time we grew so intimately acquainted that at last he became impudent. One time as I past by him, catch'td at me, endeavouring to intrude his hand where he had no interest, but he did it so rudely, that I verily thought he had spoyled me; I believe he imagined that he had caught me by the busk, which some Ladies ware very long to hide their rising bellies. I showed my self much displeased at him for so doing, expressing my resentment in imbittred words for so great a Crime. Next morning, he courted me to a Reconciliation with a Gold Watch; by that he should have been well skilled in gaining female affections: for there is nothing prevails on them more then Presents: and nothing gaines sooner over them a total conquest, then the hopes of enjoying a fair promising Fortune. With much importunity I accepted his Peace-offering, conditionally, that he should never attempt the like offence. Nothing troubled me more, then how to dress my self when

my

my cloathes were off. I durſt not lay two things together, for fear I ſhould miſtake, there were ſo many baubles, I wished for a Pen and Ink, to write on them what places they properly belonged to. Viewing them on the Table together, they repreſented to my thoughts Babel, or a greater confuſion, and nothing but a Miracle could produce Order out of them. I had ſo improv'd my ſelf by hourly practice, when none was with me, and obſervation of others, that I had now the knack on't. I new modelled my ſteps, my former being too large by three quarters; I could advantagiously caſt my eye, ſet my face in a plat-form, and diſſect my words; my feet were my only Traytors, and therefore I alwayes kept them cloſe Priſoners, for their greatneſs (like the Devils cloven-foot) proclaimed me the contrary Sex I imitated. Well, I thought it high time to be gone, not without plucking my Widgeon Having a fit opportunity, there being none preſent but himſelf and I, I pretended diſappointment of money, and that my Rents were not yet due, and therefore deſired him to lend me 10 *l.* for eight dayes; at the termination of which time, I ſhould not fail to return it him with gratitude. He was much joy'd, that I would favour him ſo far, as to accept his ſervice; and with that flew like Lightning, fearing he would have fractured his leg-bone for haſt to bring me the money, which I received from him thankfully: cauſed a Coach to be call'd, pretending I had buſineſs into the City. My Cully would have waited on me, which I utterly refuſed, telling him without privacy my affairs would prove ineffectual: whereupon he deſiſted.

I went to a Saleſman, and bought (pretendedly for

for my Maid) an ordinary, yet handsome Petty-coat and Wastcoat, buying all things requisite for a Servant: casting off my Gentlewomans Garb, I invested my self with what I had lately bought, and in that equipage I went to a Boarding-school, (which shall be nameless) where I was received as a Menial of the House. The Servants at first laught at me heartily to see how untowardly I handled the Tools of the Kitchin: Meat I spitted so strangely, as that at first sight they could not well name what that was before the fire. My Mistress in a short time taking notice of my ignorance in Kitchin-affairs, told me I was unfit for her service, and therefore would discharge me. I was much troubled at it, desiring her to continue me longer, ingeniously confessing that I knew nothing, being but newly come out of the Country; that I valued not Wages, provided I might learn experience; and it was for that intent I tendred my service. The good old Gentlewoman was well pleased with my freedome, and presently ordered the Maids, that without their usually giggleting, they should shew me any thing I understood not. Though I lay with one of the Servant-Maids, (which was a well-featured Girl, and had incomparable good flesh) yet I would not discover my Sex to her, (though much against the hair) resolving first to be well acquainted in the House. I went through my business pretty handily, giving a general satisfaction, and gaining the love of most of the young Gentlewomen. I now thought it high time to handle the matter for which I came about, for indeed flesh and blood could hold out no longer. One night I perceived my Bed-fellow could not in the least close her eyes, continu-

ally

ally sighing and tumbling to and fro, sometimes laying her leg over me, and at other times hugging me within her armes, as if *I* had been in a Press. At first *I* thought this Commotion within her proceeded out of sympathy, as questionless in part it did: for *I* found experimentally by my self, that each time she laid her leg over me, *I* thought my heart would have forc'd its passage through my breast. *I* askt her what she ailed, that she was thus so restless. At first, sighs were her onely answers, till at last, (*I* pressing her much) poor thing she melted into tears. As soon as the deluge thereof was somewhat abated; *Jone*, said she, (for so I call'd my self) *if thou wilt keep my secrets, I will tell thee my whole heart.* I promised to do that, having resolved on it before: whereupon she thus repeated her story. *Our* John *hath lov'd me a long time, and we have had many merry meetings abroad, and at home too when all were gone to bed. When he and I were alone, how he kist me, and clipt me! & would have gone farther, but I would not let him: I told him he might at last if he would marry me; telling him moreover, that unless he did so, he should never have his ends of me as long as he had a day to breath. Upon this we parted: I was about to have called him back had it not been for shame, and ever since he will hardly speak to me, seeming very strange and indifferent. Now my dear* Jone, *I'le tell thee, I cannot hold out longer, wherefore, to morrow night, I'le give him opportunity, and if he makes the least motion, I will entertain it.* I disswaded her from this rash resolution as much as possibly I could, telling her the danger that might ensue, as her being gotten with Childe, and the shame that accompanies it: hindering her preferment: besides, who would be so

mad

mad to marry a Whore? *&c.* What ever I alleadged, ſhe valued not. Seeing ſhe was full bent, I thought this the critical hour to order and qualifie her hot diſtemper. *Come, come,* (ſaid I) I *will quickly put you out of conceit with* John, *and cure this love that ſo much troubles you*; and with that I mounted, ſhe thought I was going to ſhew ſome wanton gambles, which ſome wanton Girls uſe, and therefore freely received me. But finding her miſtake, and ſomething elſe ſhe expected not from me, it was pretty to obſerve what a fine amorous Combate there was between Willingneſs and Unwillingneſs.

I thought ſhe would diſſolve ere ſhe would ſtir?
Thus Venus *came of Froth, and Froth of her.*
I needs muſt look too; it to me appear'd
Like Mouth that ſpilt its Poſſet on its Beard.

Soon after a retreat was ſounded to take a little breath, (for the charge was very hot) and ſo we parled. She could hardly believe all this while that I was a Man, though ſhe had try'd the effect: but before morning I ſatisfied her fully in that particular. I enjoyn'd her ſilence; which I thought ſhe would have done for her own intereſt ſake; which ſhe did for a while. I came at length to be very much beloved in general. It was the cuſtome almoſt every night for the young Gentlewomen to run skittiſhly up and down into one anothers Chambers; and I was ſo peſtered with them, that they would not let me ſleep. But I had an excellent Guardian in bed with me, that would not let any of them come in to us, reſolving to monopolize all the ſport to her ſelf. It was good ſport to obſerve

how this Maid always followed me as my ſhadow, and whatever I was doing of, ſhe would have a hand in it with me. What an endleſs work we made in making the beds! Our Miſtreſs ſaw her work very much neglected, laying all the blame upon my bedfelow; and indeed not without cauſe: for her mind was ſo employed about thinking on night, that ſhe did little all day; which my Miſtriſs perceiving, turned her away; which was no ſmall joy to me, being under reſtraint before.

Now I admitted the Ladies freely to bed with me one at a time. The firſt that came had like to have ſpoiled all; for as ſoon as I was about to——ſhe ſqueekt ſo loud that all the houſe might have heard her ſome of her Aſſociates running to know what was the mater, ſhe readily told them ſhe thought there was a Mouſe in the bed, for ſhe felt ſomething creep up her thighs: thus ſatisfied, they departed Having perfected my buſineſs, I enjoyn'd her as I did the other, ſilence: but alas! all Injunctions on Women to keep a ſecret are but as ſo many perſwaſions to divulge it. Notwithſtanding I had ſo enjoyned her ſecrecy, yet ſhe made it known to ſome that ſhe entertained a peculiar reſpect for, intending they ſhould participate with her in that pleaſure ſhe enjoyed. To be ſhort, there were few eſcaped me, ſo that I had tired my ſelf that I could hardly go.

To conclude, a Gentlewoman that had held out the laſt, was reſolved now at laſt to experiment what the others had done. But I ſhall never bewail my ſhame enough, being not able at that time to anſwer her expectations; and ſo ſhe returned, which made me break forth into theſe expreſſions.

What Prodigy is this? or what Portent
Is threatned to me by this dry Event?
The Lady was both willing, young, undrest,
Being in that naked garb, attired best;
And yet should'st fail now, when desired most,
Suffering the time and pleasure to be lost.
Thou mightst have had what thousands have desired,
Yet never to that happiness aspired
Diast not see her mouth water, as theirs do,
Who spy a dish of savoury meat or two?
I do confess thou art no Caultrons Bauble
To sweep down sixteen shillings of a Table.
What though thou mightst not yet have feard to enter
That fine, smooth, moist, narrow, scarlet Center,
Time was i'm sure thou well couldst do the deed,
And to my knowledge plentifully bleed.
Henceforth stand stiff, redeem thy credit lost,
Or i'l ne're draw thee but against a Post.

Some of the Gentlewomen began to find strange alterations in their body, with frequent qualms coming over their stomacks, which made me sick to be gone. My Mistress had a Son much about my stature, one time finding a fit opportunity, I got a suit of cloaths of his, with other perquisits which I put on, reassuming my proper shape and habit, and so with flying colours marched off, insulting over the conquest of so many maidenheads, leaving the *quondam* possessors thereof to deplore their ensuing misery and condemn their own rash folly.

CHAP. XII.

What a Trick he ſerved a young man of his Acquaintance, whom he met withal accidentally: how he was pinched with hunger, and what ways he invented to kill it.

I Made all the ſpeed I could to *London*, knowing the largeneſs of that Vaſt City, would afford conveniency for my concealment. But then my cloaths much troubled me, knowing nothing would betray me ſooner then them. Now did I ſee the Fates had decreed to favour my Enterprizes. For I met with a young man of my acquaintance, who ſeeing me, ran and caught me in his Arms, and with very much joy we congratulated each other, and ſo as it is uſual when Friends meet, we muſt drink together. Over our cups, I began to inquire after his condition; He ſhook his head, and ſo related to me a ſad ſtory, which in effect was to this purpoſe in his own words.

Perceiving that my Miſtreſs ſhewed me more then a common reſpect, I concluded that ſhe had entertained ſome private favour for me within her breaſt, ſo that I began to be puft up with conceit, neglecting my duty, and now deſpiſing the Chambermaid, who was before the only Saint I made nightly my oraizons to; withal, I carried my ſelf ſo imperiouſly, that my Maſter was not very well aſſured whether he durſt command me or no. My Miſtreſs would ſometimes heartily laugh, to ſee how ridiculous I carried my

my self, which I looked upon as a singular favour, mistaking her smiles for tokens of her love. Indeed, she was very affable and pleasing, which I interpreted leachery. I wrote a Letter with Verses at the bottom, intending at the first opportunity. to deliver them into her hands. My Mistriss (as it is customary with Citizens Wives, to light the candle of their husbands estates at both ends) had her Country house, to which I was sent by my Master, with some bottles of Wine, preparatory for a Feast intended for the accomodation of some special Friends; arriving, I found my Mistress had sent her Maid to London about some business, at which I blessed my propitious Stars, to direct me thither in such a fortunate and most desired hour.

After I had delivered my Message, I began to talk very familiary with my Mistress, she with a smiling countenance, ask'd me, What I meant? *not in the least checking my presumption, which made me more arrogant and bold; telling her,* I was her eternally devoted Servant; *she answered me,* I was bound to be her Servant for a time, and that I must, when commanded obey her pleasure: *to which last word, I added in my thoughts the Epithite* Venereal, *supposing she meant not to have left it out; with that* I *replyed,* Mistress, I should not deem my self worthy to be your Servant, if my resolution had not ingaged me to be so perpetually; as for my affection, it shall dayly anticipate your desires, you shall not need to lay your commands on me, since my thoughts shall be solely imployed in contriving wayes how we may injoy each other, to the mutual satisfaction of us both. *At which words, she fell into an excess of laughter, (which I judged the effects of joy,) and then asked me,* Whither I was Mad? I *answered,* No; unless too

much love had made me so; Dearest Mistress, read but this Paper, and I hope that will better inform you.

Here he stopt, pulling out of his pocket a copy thereof, which was to my best remembrance, to this purpose.

Dearest Mistress,

FRequently revolving in my thoughts, the condition I now am in, Despaire stands ready to seize me; but the consideration and knowledge of your commiserating Nature, draws me out of its ruinating Jaws. When I reflect again on the disparity of our Fortunes, and that it is your Indentured Vassal that thus prostrates his affection at your feet, I fear one blast of your just Indignation will suddainly shiprack all my hopes. I confess my error is overmuch confidence, for which I may expect ruine, which commonly attends rash Attempts; especially daring to sail in the narrow Seas, without any other Pilot then blind Love; and if I should arrive at my desired Port, I cannot deliver my Goods without stealing Custome. But waving all difficulties of this nature, consider that Love must needs be quintessential, that is not drawn from any other interest then reciprocal enjoyment; and it must needs be exceeding strong and eminent too, that will force its way through the greatest hazards. Signifie my Pardon by one gracious smile, for what I have so boldly (yet forceably) discovered, and I shall esteem my condition little inferior to what is Celestial, which is no happiness to me without the auspitious beams of your favour shine on me. And so subscribe my self according as your sentence shall be, either the

Most happy, or most miserable. The

The Verſes that were annext to the Letter, he told me, he got a Rimer to compoſe for him which afterwards he found ſtoln out of ſeveral Authors; a line out of one, and a half out of another, and ſo with the courſe thred of his brain, botch'd together; which were theſe:

Cupid did wound my heart; I hid the grief
Long time, but durſt not ſeek for your relief;
I found the ſmart increaſed on that ſcore,
For wounds, if not well ſearch'd, but rankle more
O cure me quickly then, or elſe I die;
Deny not, ſince t'here's none but you and I.

I withdrew as ſoon as I had delivered my Paper, giving her leave to read in private, what my Love had dictated. About a quarter of an hour after ſhe called me to her, aſſuring me in a day or two, I ſhould receive an anſwer to the purpoſe; and ſo abſconding her diſpleaſure, ſhe ſent me with all expedition home again. After the expiration of three dayes, ſhe came home to her City-houſe: at night ſhe pretended ſome indiſpoſition of body, and deſired to lie by her ſelf; which hearing, I thought my joy would prove a Traytor to my ſuppoſed happineſs; ſhe takes an occaſion to tell me, About twelve at night I might come to her Bed-chamber, the door whereof, ſhe would leave open for me on purpoſe. *In the mean time, ſhe ſhewed my Maſter the Letter, acquainting him with the whole buſineſs. According to the time appointed, I entered the Chamber in my ſhirt; approaching the Bed, I began to pour out my Amorous Expreſſions; and as I had one leg upon the Bed-ſide, ready to enter the Bed, where I thought my Miſtreſs had attended my pleaſure, I thought the Devil had waited on my Poſteriors*

correcting me for not making more haste. The first lash was seconded with three or four more in an instant, which made me caper up and down so nimbly about the room, that for my life I could not find the door, at last I did; speed was now the onely Guardian I had left, and so without pausing long upon it, I made but one step of the first pair of Stairs from top to the bottom, which had liked to have lamed me; before I could recover my self, my Master was with me again, which put fresh expedition into me, and so starting up; I lept down half the next pair, and tumbled down the rest. By this time he had lost the cord of his Whip, and fearing lest he might spoil me with the stick, desisted, bidding me go to bed, lest I should catch cold after so great a heat, and so with two or three parting blows I got into my chamber, where I fell into a deep consultation with my self, the result of it was this; I took my curtains and sheets, and tied them together, and then fastned one end thereof to the Window; after this I went out of the Window, and so slid, by that time I was within an half story of the ground, the knot of one of the Curtains slipt, so that falling from that height, I thought that every bone in my body had been absolutely broken. Knowing it was no wayes safe to lie there and cry God help me, I raised my self as well as I could, but I had not walked far, before I found my self in no condition of going, wherefore I resolved to lie under the next Stall. As the Devil would have it, I found a Cobblers Stall newly broke open that very night, never questioning the place, I crept in, and notwithstanding my bruise by the fall, and whipping besides, I fell fast asleep, so soundly, that I awaked not, till I was forced to it with an horse pox. For the Cobler coming to work early in the morning (according to his custome) found his door broken open, with that, he made an hideous noise, crying out,

He

He was undone; for the day before he had laid out three shillings four pence, which was all his stock in Leather; all which was stoln, with many old shooes, nay his very working implements; doubtless it was done by one of his own Fraternity, that had informed himself of his late great purchase. The Cobler entring his Stall, found me in one corner fast asleep. He took no other course to awake me, then dragging me by the heels out of my Den, into the Street, crying out, That he had got one of the Rogues, and without any more adoe, fell upon me, buffeting me with his fist, and treading me underneath his feet, making himself, both my Judge and Executioner: Thus you see one mischief attends the others heels. I begged him in a pittiful manner to let me alone, and I would confess to him all I knew, desiring him to go with me to the next Ale-house, which accordingly we did. I vowed to him I was no ways accessary to his wrong, informing him as much as I thought convenient of my sufferings shewing him what a woful plight I was in; relating it was my Masters cruelty that was the cause of all this, and no other fault of mine, then staying the last night out a little too long. The Cobler seemed to commiserate my misery, asking me forgiveness for what he had done, and so we parted. Since by the kindness of a good natured Widow (where I lie) I have recovered my hurts and strength, and now am overjoyed we should so happily meet.

After this we drank very smartly, but, I forgot not all this while my design on him. I asked him frollickly whither he would go to handicap with me, which he readily imbraced. In conclusion, There was not any thing about us of waring cloaths but we interchanged, scarce had I un-cased my self, and put on my Friends cloaths, but in came one

that

that had dogged me, attended by the Conſtable, with a Warrant to ſeize me, who they knew by no other token but my Boarding-Miſtreſſes Sons garments, I had ſtoln for my eſcape. They forthwith laid hold on my Companion, (finding them on him) telling him, *He ſhould ſeverely ſuffer for the wrong he did his Miſtreſs, in the abuſe of her houſe.* Full of horror and amazement, he beſeeched them not to carry him before his Miſtreſs, knowing how much he had offended her, ſhe would have no mercy on him; this confirmed their belief, that they had found out the Offender. The more he intreated, the more deaf and inexorable were they; and whilſt they were buſied about their miſtaken Criminal-Priſoner, I took an occaſion to give them the ſlip, knowing that a little further diſcourſe would rectifie their Error; what they did with him I know not, neither durſt I be ſo inquiſitive to underſtand: wherefore, leaving him to the mercy of ſuch, as would ſhew but little to him, I ſhall proceed forwards in my own ſtory. My ſtock was now very ſmall; how to increaſe it, I knew not. My invention was daily on the Rack, to find out expedient ways to ſupply my neceſſary expence. But my money being all ſpent, my belly began to grumble out inſufferable complaints againſt me, ſeeming to charge me with want of ingenuity & induſtry, ſince I injoyed my liberty; for want that man cannot, which wants not them. Alas, what ſhould I do? I uſed what means I could, having no better experience. There was not a Billiard-Table, Boards-End, and Nine-Pin-yard, that I did not daily viſit, frequenting ſuch as had the greateſt reſort: in a ſhort time I learned the art of Spunging ſo perfectly, that I had

had the Title of *Spung-Maſter General* conferred upon me. In thoſe places I learned to take Tobacco which was the chiefeſt part of my food; living in a manner by Smoak, as the Camelion by Air. I fed ſo lightly, that I durſt not ſtir abroad in a high wind; neither durſt I fight leſt one ſingle ſtroak ſhould have hazarded my diſſolution; continual drinking, had ſo waſhed me, that my body was tranſparent, you might have ſeen within me (without diſſection) the motion of the heart; you could have obſerved but little as to my liver, it long ſince had loſe its uſe in the conveyance of the blood, for my ſtomack had nothing therein conteined to ſupply it; like an Inn a Court Kitchin out of Term-time. In ſhort, I appeared like a walking *Skeleton*. I had ſeveral ſuggeſtions within me to proffer my ſelf again to my Maſter; but the ſhame to be ſeen in that condition, deterred me; wherefore, I reſolved to weather it out a little longer, and try whether Fortune would once more be favourable to me. My cloaths were indifferent good, which could not but procure me credit, if I would make experiment. By means whereof, I had gotten an handſome Lodging chamber. It was a publike houſe of entertainment, ſo that here I thought I ſhou'd have meat, drink, & lodging for chalk, and chalk for nothing. I called freely for what was in the houſe, wh ch was readily brought me; but when the ſervants behe'd with what celerity, (*Hacket* like) and cleanly conveyance, I had diſpoſed of what was before me, they verily believed in one week, I would cauſe a dearth in the houſe if I ſtaid; wherefore, one of the ſervants acquainted her Miſtreſs with what ſhe had obſerved, alleadging farther invectively againſt me, That I looked like

one

one of thoſe lean Beaſts which have nothing given them to feed on, but vertuous and honeſt Women; that ſhe believed I was the *Genius* of ſome hunger-ſtarved wretch, or a ſhaddow without a ſubſtance, (which was very true as to my pocket.) When I thought itwas time to go to bed, I call'dfor a candle, not mattering whither I called for a Reckoning. But my Landlady did; for ſaid ſhe, Sir, *It is our cuſtome to reckon with our Lodgers every night what they have that day, and once a week to diſcharge their lodging.* In truth, I did intend to have diſcharged my ſelf of it before the week had been out. I knew not what at preſent to anſwer her, but I was ſeldom to ſeek in ſuch caſes. I deſired her to be content for that night, on the morrow I would have my Trunks brought to her houſe; making it my Quarters for ſome time; and that ſhe ſhould find me a boon companion, drinking freely: I *believe ſo*, ſhe ſaid, *you wil be here for ſome time or may be you will make this your Refuge or Sanctuary for one night; and then you ſay you will drink freely too, give me leave to tell you, you meant at free coſt. Sir, give me my reckoning now, or you ſhall have no lodging here this night.* Do you ſuſpect me Landlady ſaid I? *Reſpect you*, ſaid ſhe, (miſtaking the word) *for what grounds unleſs I knew you better? and yet I doubt I ſhall know you too well. That's a good one indeed, reſpect a skin full of Bones; a bag of Cheſſmen; a bundle of ſmall Faggot-ſticks. Why, thou Haberdaſher of ſmall wares, doſt thou think I will reſpect thee other wayes then for thy moneys; unleſs I ſhould be ſo mad as to fall in love with Famine. Come give me my reckoning firſt, and I ſhall talk with you in another Dialect; if not, I ſhall ſet my Currs at thee*, (the Tapſter and Hoſtler) *that ſhall worry thy gibb'd Carſhip.* Hearing her ſay ſo, and thinking

ing

ing the paſſage had been clear, I betook my ſelf to flight; but running through the Entry, I ran my belly directly againſt the Tapſters leg, that lay over the bench on which he ſlept. I ran ſo fiercely, that I ſhoved his head ſo violently againſt the board, ra's'd at the end of the bench, that I made his neck double; the knock likewiſe had like to have turn'd that little brains he had within his head. As for my own part, I thought that his foot had run quite into my belly, and that pulling it out, he had left his ſhooe behind. Before I could riſe, I had three or four about me, which I thought would have limbed me, as boyes falling out, do their cocks on *Shrove-Tueſday*. At that time I would have ſpared them one limb, provided that would have contented them. But there was no mercy to be had at their hands, eſpecially the ſhrill note of their Miſtreſſes perpetually moving Tongue, ſounding a charge in their ears. Being tyred with me, they would be revenged of my cloaths. They would have ſtript me (I think) ſtark naked for my Reckoning, but that one ſaid, *Let his cloak ſuffice*; at which, another pulled ſo furiouſly at it, that miraculouſly, without renting that thin tranſparent garment, he got it all but the cape. In this condition I was brought before my new Landlady; I asked her what was to pay, *Sirrah* (ſaid ſhe) *more then thou haſt in thy pocket*; (2 s. 4 d.) As well as I could ſpeak, I demanded how it came to be ſo much. *Why*, (ſaid ſhe) *there is for Beef* 1 s. *for Bread* 4 d. *ſix pipes of Tobacco, and three pots of Ale; all this thou hadſt in leſs than half an hour*. I would not contradict her, though I knew it was near an hour I deſired her to keep my Cloak for the reckoning, but durſt not threaten her for her abuſe. Being about Hay-making

time,

time, I walked out into the Fields, resolving to spend that night in contemplation. I had now time to *consider* the damage I sustained in this skirmish. They had carried away all my Ribbands with their fingers, otherwise my cloaths received the least harm. My Nose resembled a black pudding before it is boyled, and my Eyes were fled into my head for fear of such melancholy meat. My cheeks were so puft up with swelling pride, that they were resolved to close up the portails of my Opticks, that they might not be eye-witnesses of the height of their ambition. My ears were so maulled with their fleshy Hammers, that I heard a peal within my head for joy, I suppose that my eyes had taken up their residence with my brains. At last I felt something about my shoulders; at first I thought it had been the weight of the blows, but feeling, found it a part of my friend that still hung about my neck, and would not leave me; which put me in mind of that faithful Cloak that would never leave its Master, although his Master had attempted all wayes imaginable to leave it. I must needs say, *I* loved my Cloak so well, as that it grieved me much to be compelled to part with it. It had been a servant to servants, ever since the setting up of the first billiard-table, whence it deriv'd its Pedegree. Being deprived of its imployment, and dispossest of its antient habitation, its heart strings were ready to break, and being not able to take a nap for grief, turned changling. The young man I had it of, told me, that from the fifteenth successively, it was descended to him; but they were unworthy to him, that having had his best days, would turn him off in his extream old age. I have him so fresh in my memory, that I cannot but condole his loss;

Cloak

Cloak, if I may so call thee, though thou art
Thou ravish'd from me, don't abruptly part.
Thou didst not take distaste, and so art gon,
Cause once I call'd thee a meer hanger on.
'Twas but in jest; for had I now my will,
I'de have thee for to hang about me still.
Now I may tax thee justly, for I see
That now th'art nothing else but levitie;
Nay when I had thee scarcely did I know,
Sometimes whether I had thee on or no.
Thou wert so thin, and light, that some have thought,
Thee made of that same web Arachne *wrought,*
And say th'art useless now, unless men put
Thee like a Cobweb to a finger cut.
I love thee still for better and for worse;
He that divorc'd us let him have my curse.
Sure 'twas a red Nos'd fellow, for I know,
He coming near, it was but touch and go.
But let him keep thee, for thou'lt useless be
To him; thick cloaths suits best with knavery

Day appearing I got me a stick out of a hedge, and so walked in *Querpo* into the City. I walkkd up and down, but met with none of my acquaintance on whom I might fasten on as a *bur*. Noon approaching, my belly began to Chime, I thought all the meat in *Eastcheap*, would not lay that spirit hunger had raised within me. Coming by a bakers shop, I pretended to be ignorant of the City, and as I was asking him the way to such a place, not caring what, I happily secured a penny loaf, which I carried off undiscoverd; I thought it not good to cumber my pocket with it, wherefore at two bits I gave it my belly to carry. Surely at that time I had an *Ostriches* stomack;

ſtomack; every thing I put into my mouth, paſſed through me like Quickſilver. Going a little farther, I came to an Ordinary, where I ſaw two ſitting in a lower Room expecting their meat I ſate me down in the next little box to them. Immediately there was brought to them powdred Beef and Turnips; the young man that ſerved them, came to me, demanding what I would have, I bid him let me alone and not ſpeak too loud, for thoſe two which were next me, were my very good friends, and I would ſtartle them by and by with my unexpected appearance, at which he left me. Finding my opportunity, I ſlipt my hands through a whole, in the form of an heart, which was in the partition that devided us, and laying hold on the Turnips, I ſpake aloud, you hoggs are ye at the Roots, I will make one among you inſtantly, and ſo brought out my handful; having devoured them in a trice, I preſented my ſelf to their view, and ſate down with them: *Gentlemen*, ſaid I, *excuſe my frollick I am in a merry humour to day.* They concluded what I ſaid, to be a truth, and bade me welcome. *Nay*, ſaid I, *my meat will come inſtantly as a ſupply*; and ſo it had need, for we made a clear board immediately. Seeing this, they called the boy, taxing him for ſloth, that he did not bring my meat. *Sir*, ſaid he, *the Gentleman did not order me to bring any*; at which they frownd, and began to charge me with incivility. *What are ye angry, ſaid I?* To which they repli'd, *Affirmatively*: *if ſo*, I anſwered, (laying my hand upon a full pot of *Ale*) I *value your anger no more then the drinking this Pot, which I ſwallowed at two gulps, and ſo bid them farewel*; leaving them to call for another Ordinary.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

How he had like to have been transported, being taken up by a Kidnaper, vulgarly called a Spirit.

HAving satisfyed my stomack, I walkt along with much more courage than before, which had been to little purpose, had I not had a stick in my hand: For there was hardly a dog in the street (which I went through) that gave me not his *grinning Salutation*, and would when my back was turned (knowing else I would never have suffered their humility) have kist my very *heels*, had not my stick prevented their *Snearing Dogships* mouths. I have wondred often, why Dogs will bark so incessantly at the sight of a Tinker, Pedlar, Tom-a-Bed'am, nay, any suspicious fellow; till I found it my self by experience, that by natural instinct, they know and hate the scent of a Rogue. And so it appears by smelling out a *Spirit*, who perceiving my idle loitering motion, accosted me. Well may he be call'd a *Spirit*, since his nature is like the Divels, to seduce any he meets withall, whom he can perswade with allurements, and deluding falsities to his purpose.

After he had ask'd me many impertinent questions, he invited me to drink with him; I ingenuously told him I had not a peny, otherwise his motion

would be acceptable to me. At which he caſt up his eyes to heaven, and laying his hand on his breaſt, alas poor young man ſaid he, what pitty it is ſuch a luſty fellow as thou art ſhouldſt want mony; which argues, thou art both deſtitute of friends, and an imployment alſo. Well, I'll ſay no more for the preſent, but before we part, I'll ſtudy ſome way or other for thy advantage; which I ſhall do meerly out of commiſeration to the miſera leneſs of thy condition, as alſo out of reſpect to thy Father, whom I am confident I have heretofore known, by the reſemblance thou beareſt him in thy countenance. I could not but ſmile to my ſelf to hear how this Raſcal diſſembled; not diſcovering my thoughts, I willingly went with him to drink, reſolving to ſee what the event would be; after he had pous'd a while, well, ſaid he, I have found it.

There is a *Merchant*, an intimate friend of mine, that wants a Store-houſe-keeper; Now if you can caſt accompts ever ſo indifferently, you ſhall find entertainment from him, and 40 l. *per annum* for encouragement. I told him that I joyfully accepted his kind profer, and that I ſhould refer my ſelf to be diſpoſed of as he ſhould think fit. With that he imbrac'd me, ſaying, within two days I ſhould go aboard the ſhip where the Merchant was, who would go along with me to *Virginia* (where he pretended the Merchants Plantation lay) in the mean time you ſhall go along with me to my houſe, where you ſhall lie, and ſhall receive from me what your neceſſities require. I had heard before, how ſeveral had been ſerv'd in this kind; ſo that being forewarn'd, I was fore-arm'd, *præmonitus, præmunitus.*

nitus. He carried me away presently to *Wapping*, and hous'd me: I was brought into a Room where six or seven were all smoaking. They smoak'd out of their mouths like a Chimney that belongs to a Brewers Stoke-hole, so that there was little discernable but smoak, and the glowing coals of their pipes. Certainly the smell of this room would have out-done *Assa-fatida*, or burned Feathers in the cure of Ladies troubled with the fits of the Mother. As to the sight, the place resembled Hell, so did it likewise as to it's scent, compounded of the perfume of stinking Tobacco and Tarpalwin. So that I concluded the resemblance most proper;

In Hell damn'd Souls, fire, smoak, and stink appear,
Then this is Hell, for these four things were here.

I was seated between two, lest I should give them the slip.

After I had been there awhile, the Cloud of their smoak was somewhat dissipated, so that I could discern two more in mine own condemnation: but alas poor sheep, they ne're considered were they were going, it was enough for them to be freed from a seven years Apprenticeship, under the tyranny of a rigid Master (as they judged it, coming but lately from sucking the breasts of a too indulgent mother) and not weighing (as I know not how they should) the slavery they must undergo for five years, amongst Bruits in foreign parts, little inferior to that which they suffer who are *Gally-slaves*. There was little discourse amongst them, but the pleasantness of the soyl of that Con-

tinent (we were design'd for, out of design to make us swallow their guilded Pills of ruine) and the temperature of the Aire, the plenty of Fowl, and Fish of all sorts; the little labour that is perform'd or expected, having so little trouble in it, that it rather may be accounted a pastime than any thing of punishment; and then to sweeten us on farther, and they insisted on the pliant loving natures of the women there; all which they used as baits to catch us silly Gudgeons. As for mine own part I said but little, but what tended to the approbation of what they said.

For all my aim (as I related before) was to understand the drift of this Rogue, and then endeavour to get what I could from him. By this time supper was talkt of by our Masters; so choice they were in their diet, that they could not agree what to have. At last one stands up, and proclaiming silence, said, That a Dish of Bruise was the most *Princely Dish* of any. And to tell you truly, by his looks, I thought he had been begot just as his Mother had put a sop into her mouth, of that Stomach murdering stuff, the grease running about her chops, which pleasing her fancy, struck so deep an impression in the imagination upon her conception, that the face of that thing she brought forth, lookt much like a *Toast* soaking in a Cooks *Dripping-pan*.

That he might perswade the rest, this way to indulge his appetite, he added farther, that it was a Dish would not be expensive, and soon ready. My Landlady to back him on, said, she had some skimmings of the pot, which she had been collecting these three moneths, some whereof she questioned

ſtion'd not but to procure, and let her alone to order it ſo, that we ſhould ſay we never had a better diſh aboard in our lives.

Another contradicting him, preferred a bowl of Peaſe pottage before the chiefeſt meat whatever, that he could never look into the pot and ſee them boyl round, but that his heart leapt within him, and kept time with their motion, My maſter (that was their Senior) ſcorn'd to be controul'd in his fancy; and therefore poſitively determined to have ſome *Poor John*, ſwearing that the *Great Mogul* did eat nothing elſe thrice a week, and that *Atabalipa* (that Indian King whom *Cortez* conquered) caus'd a *Sacrifice* every day to be made of them to his Idol, commanding them to be laid on an *Altar* made of ſome coals of fire, then the fat of ſome Beaſt rubb'd thereon (becauſe they had no Butter) and ſo preſented to the *Idol*, afterwards to the King, which he did eat with inexpreſſable ſatisfaction. Order was given that this *Delicate fare* might be provided. Though they did *beat* it moſt *unmercifully*, yet it would not *yield*, reſolving rather to be *broken* in *pieces*, then to become unlike it's *Maſters*, or ſhew any thing of a *tender nature*. There was one alotted me for my proportion, which I us'd as they had done, laying it on the coals a little while, and ſo committing it to my teeths diſpoſal. I never found till now that my teeth could be thus ſhamefully baffled. They made ſeveral aſſaults upon it to little purpoſe. My teeth at length fearing a total conqueſt, deſperately and inragedly ſeiz'd on the thinneſt and weakeſt part, and holding it as faſt as a Viſe, at laſt in the conflict overpowered one ſmall fleak.

Now did I really imagine my self at Sea, where for want of provision *I* was forc'd to feed on *Cordage* or the *Ships sides*. Had this poor creature been ground *small*, I might have made as hard a shift to have swallowed it, as those Seamen did the *Sawdust* of deal boards coming from *Norway*, and destitute of other food. That night I slept but little, contriving a way for my deliverance, neither could I, had I swallowed *Opium* for that purpose, for the innumerable quantity of *Buggs* (as some call them) that had *invaded* my body, being weary (as I suppose) of inhabiting any longer the *dry mansion* of that old rotten Bedsteed on which I lay. In the morning I found the *ruines* of a Looking-glass in the window, which I took up to discover what *knots* or nodes those were I felt o'rspreading my face. The sight whereof struck into me a Pannick fear, verily believing I had been infected with the spotted Feaver.

I begin to curse the Bed and Sheets, imagining the Contagion proceeded from them; to be satisfied herein, I drew aside at the Beds feet, the Curtain (that is to say a part of a Tilt) pinn'd there to keep the wind off, which otherwise would have fann'd us to death, coming in so furiously through the Port-cullise of the window: (for glass there was little) At first sight I question'd whither I was not lately risen from the dead, since there was visible before my eyes, the Black Cloth that covered my Herse. Had not we gone to bed without a Candle over night, I should sooner have chosen a Bulk than this Bed to lie on. It might have been a good *Quære*, whether those sheets had ever been washt since their weaving, & continualy since implid

by

by Whores and Bawds, ſucceſſively to ſweat out their contagious humours, and matter proceeding from their ulcerated Bodies.

My pretended friend perceiving my amazement, bid me be of good courage, for thoſe marks in my face were onely occaſion'd by a *ſtinking ſort of Vermine*, who ſeldome meddle with ſuch as are accuſtomed to them, onely giving their welcom to ſuch as were *New-comers*. I took theſe ſufferings as patiently as I could; but thinking it was an ill coming for me to either of them, and it ſhould not be long before I would take my *farewell*. We had ſcarce Breakfaſted, before a Meſſenger came into the room, and with much ſeeming reſpect pretended to deliver a Meſſage to my friend. I gueſs'd it was to inform him how the tide ſerv'd, and ſo it prov'd. My friend told me we muſt be gone inſtantly, for the Merchant attended my coming. Wherefore we preſently went down to the ſtairs, to take Boat, by the way he told me that he would go with me in the ſame ſhip, and take as much care of me as he would of his own ſon, whom I underſtood afterwards he had too ſure, above a year ſince ſtoln away, and ſold him as a ſlave. One while I thought to have ran for it; another time I thought to have cry'd out, *A Spirit, a Spirit*, but that the thought of the Water-men, being his Accomplices, deter'd me. I was at my wits end, not knowing what to do. Coming into the Boat, being now deſtitute of all relief, I ask'd him according to his former pretence, whether he reſolv'd to go to Sea with me? yes, reply'd he. I queſtion Sir (ſaid I) whether you ever told a truth in your life, but I am reſolv'd you ſhall now; and withal I flung my

ſelf with him overboard. Theſe which were in the Boat, immediately endeavoured at our riſing to pull us up into the Boat. But I clapping my hands unfortunately on the ſide of the Boat on which they within leaned, I overturn'd it upon me. The firſt thought this accident produc'd in me, was that a VVhale had ſwallowed me, and that I was in a dark concave of his belly, or that Death had arreſted me, and clapt me up a cloſe Priſoner for my ſins, in Hells deep and black Dungeon. But by the induſtry and expedition of many VVatermen, eye-witneſſes of this paſſage (which had like to have prov'd tragical) the Boat was recovered, and *I* the firſt perſon taken up and ſet on ſhore.

Multorum manibus Grande levatur onus.

Many hands make light work. I nere ſtaid to ſee what was become of my good Friend (a pox take him) but with what ſpeed I could, attended with a great number of little *hooping Owlets* (I mean the young Fry of Scullars) I ſecur'd my ſelf from this *Anthropopola* or Man-ſeller; A charitable woman ſeeing me in this *pickle* (for it was ſalt water, with my *Sons'd guts*, may teſtifie, if they pleaſe, in their grumbling manner of *ſpeaking*) told me that ſhe would entertain me till to morrow. This was the greateſt *Cordial* could be appli'd to this *croſs*; without many complements, I thankt her for her great love. Now becauſe ſhe ſaw what condition I was in, ſhe immediately put me to bed.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

How under the pretence of begging, he ſtole a Cloak, and with that went to a Gaming Ordinary; what a bold Adventure he made there, and the Succeſs thereof.

PArting from this good woman, I began to think that the Art of ſtealing might be reckoned amongſt the liberal Sciences; for though it may be call'd an *Handicraft*, yet it cannot be lookt on as *Mechanick*. This is the *Art*, the right practice whereof is the true *Phil-ſopher ſtone*, the *Elixir* of life, with which many turn *Poyſon* into *Medicine*, coarſe cloath into cloath of Gold, hunger into fulneſs and ſatiety, convert rags into Satines, and all this done by a quick wit and ſlight of hand.

The Antiquity and Dignity of this profeſſion, I ſhall relate elſewhere, and ſhall proceed on in my Adventures.

The Evening or Twilight being come, I chanc'd to look in at a door, and perceiving none at hand, I went in boldly, reſolving if I met any to beg an Alms of them, having before premedatated what I had to ſay, *viz.* that I was a poor diſtreſſed young Gentleman, my Father, Mother, nay all my relations I knew, being dead, and that knowing not what

to

to do, was forc'd (under the covert of the night) to beseech the assistance of charitable minded persons. But in my way I found none that should occasion my using this form.

I found in the Parlor a good Camlet Clook, which I made bold to put on, and so very gravely walk'd out of the house, but coming to the door, you must think there was *Wild-fire* in my breech, that hastned me out of the street. Being gotten a Bow shot off, I thought my self indifferent secure; so that I slackned my pace, and in that equipage I went to an Ordinary, I lookt on awhile, but my fingers itcht to be at it. Why, thought I, have I not adventured a *Goal*, a *whipping*, or an *hanging*, and shall I now feat a *kicking*, a *pumping*, or a *Bog-house*. These considerations made me resolutely take up the Box, and I threw a main, which was 7. a great deal of money was presently set me, I knew it was but to little purpose to balk them; so that confidently I threw at all, which I nickt with eleven, and so continued holding seven hands together. Perceiving I had got a considerable quantity of money, and fearing I might lose that which I had so boldly adventured for, I thankt my propitious stars, and the Gentlemen, who had rather lose their money, than suspect any that hath the Garb of one well Extracted, and so bad them good night. A priviledge too many *Sharking Ubiquetarians* use without interruption, being most commonly in fee with the *Waiters* and *Box-keepers*, who will be sure to be in the behalf of such confident Cheats, if they lose, pretending great knowledge of them, that they are men of repute, civil and responsible, which frequent

quent

quently so pevails upon a *Month*, that he hath not a *word* to say more. Questionless Ordinaries were first impartially founded, interdicting all play but which was upon the *Square*; but since by the connivance of the *Box-keepers*, when the Table grows thin, and few at it, let the stranger beware, for the *Box-keeper* shall walk off, pretending some speedy dispatch of a business concerning the *House of Office, &c.* whilst your Antagonist shall put the change upon you, or make use of his own *Jack-in-a-box*, and then had you 500 l. (would you set like a *Gamester*) he would have it to a penny in a short while, with whom the *Waiters* go snips. If at any time such they know want an *High flyer, &c.* they know how, and when to supply him.

Full fraught with this good fortune, and so laden I was ready to sink, I resolv'd to moor my Vessel in the next Harbour. The Landlord whence I came, was very loath to entertain me, his lodger having serv'd him a scurvy trick the night before, conveying out of the window, the Furniture of a room that cost him 40 l. besides a great silver Tanker, which the Gentleman would have fill'd with stale Beer and Sugar, to stand by his bed-side all night, pretending it was his custom. But I desiring him to lay up a parcel of money for me till the next morning, quite put out the eye of his Jealousie. I shew'd my self that night very exceeding noble, concealing my success at play, that he might conclude the greatness of my expence, proceeded from the nobleness of my nature, having a good estate to back it. I was conducted to bed with many Ceremonies, and abundance of respect; Sleep I could not, for thinking how to dispose of my self.

I had experimented the various exigencies and extremities an unsetled condition is accompanied withal, and knowing how securely I could purloin from my Master, if *I* would moderate my theft; I concluded to supplicate my Master, by a Letter, for my reception into his service, not forgetting my Mistresses *quondam* kindnesses. If my Master should refuse to re-entertain me, I had by me what might svpply my necessities, till I had re-considered how to imprve my stock, or bestow my self. Nor to delay time, the next day I wrote him this Letter.

SIR,

HAving seriously considered the greatnes of my folly in running from so good a Master, (whom I may more rightly intitle Father) with tears I beg mercy of God my Creator, and forgiveness of you my preserver. Mitigate my offence by revolving in your mind the fewness of your, which makes me (as it doth most others) prone to rambling fancies. Look then favourably on my long absence from you, as a meer exiliency, a youthful elapse, which maturity of age may rectifie. If you can forgive my follies, I will study to forget them, and daily endeavour the propagation of my fidelity in the remainder of my time. By the Bearer hereof you may signifie your pleasure.

Sir, *I am*
Your cordially penitent
Servant, *&c.*

Wich

With much joy my master read this Letter, and hasten'd him away to bring me to him. Having converted my silver into Gold, sowing it in my Collar and Wastband, and putting my self into a Garb convenient for his sight, I went to him.

CHAP. XIII.

His Master sheweth him more kindness than formerly; the ill requital he made him, by Cuckolding him, an accident that fell out thereupon, which produced two remarkable Stories, deduc'd from the strength of Imagination.

MY Master upon my reception, told me he had freely forgiven me, and if that I would henceforward endeavour the prosecution of a more regular course of life, he would forget too my past follies. I promis'd him more than the strictest Zelot was able to do, and beg'd him pardon aforehand, if he found a defect in perfo-mance.

As my expressions gave my Master much content, so my return (I perceiv'd by my Mistresses eyes) gave her the greatest satisfaction. My Master began to doat on me again, seeing I daily trebled my

my diligence, and so active I was in every thing that concern'd his affairs, that it was hard for any to anticipate me in my intention.

This gain'd so much upon his facile good nature, that I had liberty to wear my Hat, and sit at Table with him, neither would he command me any thing servile. I had (as formerly) the same sollicitations from my *Brother Snippers*, but fearing lest one time or another I might be snapt by the timerous nature of some, who if once taxt, will confess, not onely as to themselves, but likewise detect the whole knot of a *Brother-hood*, I resolv'd to have no more to do with them, but would snip securely by my self, knowing, that in any secret design, if many are concern'd, their business cannot be long kept private. I now kept close to my business, not harbouring the least temptation to any extravagancy, and had sequestred my self from what might render me publickly notorious, and onely studied by what means I might raise my Fortune, intending to build my future estate upon the ruine of other men; having nothing of mine own but my late purchase at play, my onely way was (as I thought by some's success therein) to make the world believe I was really reform'd, and so create to my self a credit; whereas I was onely a *Devil* converted into an *Angel* of *light*, or a *Woolf* in *Sheeps-clothes*. Now did I begin to *cant* religiously, and not omit one Sabboth wherein I did not take Sermons Notes, judging this religious cloak to be the best expedient to screw my self farther into my Mistresses favour, who doted on *Morning Excercises*, and monethly *Fasts*. If my Master had forgot to do the *duty* of the day, I would with much

much respect put him in mind of the neglect, desiring that I might repeat what had been delivered. As they looked upon my conversion more miraculous then that of St. *Paul*, so they gave me the greatest incouragement, lest like *weak women*, I might prove a Back-slider. There were few private meetings my Mistress heard of, but by the leave of my Master, I must conduct her to them; which were as so many portents of our private meetings afterwards, where *Venus* should appoint.

I am sorry that I am so uncharitable as to say that the *zeal* of her *Spirit* was not so *hot*, in *kindling* the *coals* of her *devotion*, as the *motion* of the flesh pricking her on to the *understanding* of some thing else, which the consequence will make appear. Every day I had some remark of her love, which I receiv'd with much submissive respects, pretending I understood not her meaning; which added but fewel to the blazing flame of love within her. I could not be ignorant, that since she began to court me, she could prosecute it to the end. Her Courtship methought was very prepostrous, she might have first receiv'd the charge from me, and by that means she would have found me prepar'd, whereas otherwise she might have been deceiv'd in her expectation.

My Mistress gave me so many opportunities, and signified her desires by so many tokens and dumb expressions, that I began to condemn my fears, which rendred me unworthy of her favours, in not boldly entring that *Breach* that was made to my hand. The Besieger deserves not the honour of possessing that *City*, whose *Gates* are freely opened to him, yet dares not *enter*. Whil'st I was thus ru-

mi-

minating, my Mistress came to the Counting-house where I was writing, and leaning upon my shoulder, askt me what I was doing; I told her, Nothing but writing. *Nothing*, I believe, said she nor never will do *any thing*, but draw up Blanks, without ever filling *up the spaces*; and so abruptly left me. She knew the quickness of my apprehension, and so left the interpretation thereof to my own construction.

Not long after, (thinking her words had left a deep impression (as they did) and withal concluding *I* would give her the sense of them, when I had an opportunity; She informs my Myster that she had a great desire to visit a Gentlewoman she had not seen a long time, and requested that her man *Thomas* (for that was my name) might wait on her, to which he assented. Though *I led her*, yet I wondred where she *led me*, through one street into another, till we arrived at the water-side. She bid me call for a pair of Oars; which *I* accordingly did. The Watermen were very inquisitive, according to their custom, to know whither we intended. Well, well, said she, put off, and then it will be time enough for you to understand. Now, said she, row us up to *Fox-hall*. I for my part was somewhat amazed; yet I partle guest at what she drove at. I kept at a distance, shewing her the respect of a servant; which she taking notice of, laught, saying, Come Cuz, why dost a not sit neerer? To which I repli'd as familiarly (for by this time I had much improv'd the stock of my confidence) I were best to sit a little neerer you, since I shall be the best expedient to ballance the Boat even, or trim it, for you are but *light*, *on your side*,

sides. This expression I doubt nettled her, for presently thereupon she shot a peircing dart from her eye (which I fancied to have penetrated my very soul) how now Cuz said she, I thought you had a better opinion of me, I understand the Riddle. Your expressions may be very *dark* to some, however I have too much *light* in it. I would have made an Apology for my self, but that she hindred me by whispering me in the ear, to this effect, that if she was *light*, there was no other cause but my self, and that if I abus'd her love any longer, she would sit the heavier on my skirts. Landing, we went streight to Spring-Garden, by the way she told me I must lay aside all formality, and for the better carrying on the design we went upon, she would have me as afore assume the title of Cuz. We were conducted into an obscure Bower, I suppose one of *Loves Chapels of ease*, where without a *Clew* it would be hard for any to find us. There was not any thing wanting that might delight the Appetite, which with much freedom we enjoy'd together.

Now said my Mistris, I shall take of the Veil of my modesty, and discover to thee the very *naked secrets* of my heart. The first time that ever I saw thee I had more than a common respect to thee, and there was not a time since, wherein I had the sight of thee, but that it added new fewel to the flame of my affection: I us'd all possible means to smother or blust it in the bud, but could not: I summoned my reason to confute my passion, and notwithstanding I alledged that there was a disproproportion in our age, an unsuitableness as to our condition; and lastly, how great a stain it would

be to my religious profeſſion; yet Love got the Victory over theſe, and would have been too ſtrong for ten times as many; the reſt ſhe ſupplyed with kiſſes, which were infinite.

Having gain'd a little breath, and ſhe again having lent me the uſe and *diſpoſal* of my own mouth, I return'd to this her Amorous Oration ſomething ſuitable to it by way of retalliation; Proteſting with invocations, that ſince ſhe had ſo compleated my happineſs by her love, I would periſh before I would be guilty of the leaſt abuſe therein.

That had it not been for the ſenſe of my unworthineſs, and fear of hazarding her love, and ſo gained her diſpleaſure, no other difficulty ſhould have deter'd me from declaring and diſcovering what ſhe had prevented me in, adding that where the quinteſſence of all loves contracted into one body, it could not equalize mine. Come, ſaid ſhe, let us leave of talking in ſuch idle phraſes, let future conſtancy make apparent the reality of our affections, and let us not loſe any time wherein we may mutually enjoy each other. It is but a folly for me to mince the matter but I will be plain. By the way let me leave theſe inſtructions with you.

Let not my love cauſe any ſlighting or diſreſpect in you to your Maſter, neither let it ſo puff you up with pride, as to contemn your fellow ſervants. In company ſhew much more reverence to me than formerly. In private when none ſees us but our ſelves, be as familiar and free as actions can demonſtrate. Be conſtant to me alone, for true love will not admit of plurality. Be ſecret and ſilent, and follow not the common practiſe of vain-glorious Fools, that in requital of thoſe favours they have

have receiv'd in private of some credulous Female, will make their braggs of them in publick. As if it were not enough for them to rob them of their Chastities, but must likewise murther their Reputations: She propounded more Articles, which I have forgot now, but I remember I sealed them without a *witness*. We made an end of our business for that time, with much expedition, to the intent the tediousness of our staying might not be suspected by the ignorant *Cuckold* at home: I have reason now for so calling him.

Coming home, I appli'd my self to the business of the Shop as before, enjoyning my eyes a severe pennance, not so much as to look towards that Object they so dearly loved. According to my usual time I went to Bed, but sleep I could not, for thinking on what I had done. About one a clock I was much startled, to hear something come into my chamber, but before I could give my eyes the liberty for a discovery, my Mistress had gotten within the sheets, and not daring to speak, because my Master lay in the next room, most commonly by himself, and her chamber was the next to that.

I say we durst not speak, so that the only language we us'd were mutual embraces, kisses, twining of legs, handling of breasts, feeling the exquisite smoothness of flesh, with which we had *nunquam satis*, my sole unhappiness was, that I had not the benefit of sight to view the whiteness of her skin, which would have added to my extasie. Neer upon day break my sweet (*extempore*) bedfellow left me, at anunhappy time, for then was my Master awake, which might have ruined us

both which had ſo faln out, had he been reſolute or couragious, but on the contrary exceeding timerous, but more eſpecially childiſhly afraid of the ſuppoſed walking of Spirits: For hearing the boards crack twice or thrice, with the weight of her body, beſides, by the help of ſtar-light, perceiviug ſomething to move all in white, he ſhrunk underneath the cloaths, not daring to put out his head, now did his imagination work as *ſtrongly* almoſt as his *Breech*, ſuggeſting ſtrange and ridiculous things to his fancy. But I ſhall give him leave to tell his own ſtory. A little after it was day, being almoſt ſtifled for want of freſh ayr, and choak'd with the ſtink that was in the bed, he boldly and valiently put his head out of the coverlid, and after he had thrice exorcis'd the Devil, or the ſuppoſed evill Spirit, wi h avoid Satan, repeating as often that Scripturnal Sentence, *Reſiſt the Devil and he will flye from thee*; He call'd out as loud as he might for me to come to him, I leap'd out of bed, and ran to him, asking him what was the matter, O *Thomas*, ſaid he, light a Candle quickly; I running in haſt to light a Candle, fell (by miſtaking the firſt ſtep) down the ſtairs, which made a te rible noiſe, my Maſter hearing me, cry'd out alſo, (ſaying, O God, what will become of me) thinking the Devil indeed had miſtook me for himſelf, and that he was horſing me on his back to carry me away; with that he fell to prayer ſo fervently loud, that up ſtarts my Miſtris and the Maids, running to know what was the matter, fear had ſo poſſeſt him, that he could not be perſwaded, but that they were ſome of the Deveiiſh crew.

At firſt they thought him to be faln mad, but find-

finding out the cauſe of this diſtraction, with much adoe my Miſtreſs made him ſenſible of his miſtake. Being fully aſſured, that they were not (yet) damned Spirits, he relates what he had ſeen, in this manner: My Miſtreſs afterwards told me, that had it not been for laughing, which ſo buſied her, that her ſenſe of ſmelling for that time had left her, ſhe could never have endured to hear him out, for that notorious ſtink which came from the Bed, when he ſtirred ever ſo little.

I wonder'd, ſaid he, that, contrary to my uſual coſtome, I awak'd about four a clock, whereas I uſed to ſleep ſoundly, thou knoweſt till eight. I hearkned, ~~at firſt I~~ perceiv'd onely the boards to crack, but preſently after I heard chains rattle, and the ſtools flung about the room, the bed, and I in it *danced* up and down, as if a *Scotch Bag-pipe* had been plaid upon by a *Northern witch*, and the Devil the while ſupplying the *Bellows* with wind. Sometimes they pull'd me out of Bed, and laid me on the could floor, and then toſt me in again like a *Dog in a Blanket*.

Hearing no noiſe, I attempted to peep out, but ſcarcely had mine eyes recovered the top of the bed cloaths, when I ſaw ſtanding by me, a compoſition of meer bone, with a ſhrowd thrown over his ſhoulders, like an *Iriſh Brachin*, or a *Scotch Pladd*, with a light Taper in one hand. I knew not what uſe he could make of it, for there were onely *holes* in his head inſtead of eyes, and an Hour-glaſs in the other, he grinn'd at me with his teeth, (for he had no lips) and ſhaking his chains left me, which ſight ſo terrified me, that I had like to have *ſhot* out (like a *Pudding* in a *Bag*) all that was with-

in me. My Mistress had like to have broken out into extreme laughter, had not the consideration of danger (that might have ensu'd thereon) hindred her.

After this, it was a long time before he would be perswaded to lye in that Chamber again, which made me curse his strong conceit, for by this means he would lye with his Wife, which interrupted our sweet venereal pastime. As for my part, I believed he would never have return'd to his own chamber again, for he trembled when he past through it in the day time; and if alone, he would so thunder down the stairs, (fear giving wings to his feet) as if (*Vulcan* like) he had been sent by *Jupiter head-long* in a message.

Another accident (hapning not long after) cur'd him in part of his ridiculous belief, grounded on nothing else but fancy: In the Sellar, on a certain beam that went cross, there were great quantity of Tenter-hooks placed there, some to hang meat on, others of a smaller sort for other uses.

Our Cat being somewhat ravenous, was following the scent, and had gotten upon the Beam, her foremost feet slipping, she was strangely caught by the tail, and not able to recover her self: Being terribly pained by the hook, she made a most hideous noise, which made our Dog fall a howling. This strange din first approach'd my Master's ears, who, awaking my Mistress, ask'd her now whether she would believe her own ears. At first she confest to me, she knew not what to think, her conscience being yet tender (which having no long time accustomed her self to sin, was not hardned and fear'd up) put her in mind of what she had lately committed,

so

so that she had like to have concluded that it was *Satan* was sent to *buffet* her: But she having a Martial Spirit, and not easily daunted, she hearkned further, and then judg'd that Thieves had broken into the house.

My Master all this while was *breathing his last at both ends*, whilst my Mistress leap'd out of Bed, and came to my Chamber-door, bidding me in all haste to rise, for there were Thieves in the house. I confess I had no great mind to be Kill'd, and therefore I was in no great hast to rise, sometimes buttoning my Doublet, and anon unbuttoning it again: Perceiving that I delaid, she came again, taxing me with Cowardize, and meanness of Spirit, which put new life into me, making me resolve to adventure my life, rather than hazard the loss of her good opinion.

Finding my Mistress in her Smock, I thought it a shame for me to have any Cloaths on; thus nakedly arm'd, only a good long *Tool* I carried with me (I mean a *Spanish Tuck*) we march'd on. Coming to the Stair-head, my fancy troubled me a little too, for the noise had so amaz'd me, that I would fain have had my Mistress to go first: She could not forbear laughing, to observe how Complemental and Ceremonious at that time I was. Having scattered my fear by resolution, how do I abuse my self, said I, and with that boldly went on.

By this time a light was produc'd, and then those Bug-bear thoughts which darkness possesseth the fancy withall, began to vanish. There was not a hole big enough to contain a man, but what my *Spanish Leather Blade prob'd*. Descending the

Sellar-ſtairs, I there plainly ſaw the Original cauſe of our fear and diſtraction, hanging by the tail, I call'd my Miſtreſs to the ſight, and now the Maids too would be Spectators, underſtanding the danger to be overpaſt.

Well, the general vote was, that the Cat ſhould be carried up ſtairs to our Maſter, and ſhew him the *wound in his Tail*, for evidence to prove his guilt in being ſeduc'd by *fancy*.

He hearing ſome come up, thought we were all deſtroy'd, and that they were coming up to diſpatch him too: Wherefore he cri'd out, Save my Life, and take all I have. His wife (not to encreaſe his perplexity) bid him quiet himſelf, there was no harm, nor any like to be done, and withall ſo convinc'd him of his folly both paſt and preſent, that he had not a word to ſay in his own defence; he enjoyning us all ſilence, we were diſmiſs'd.

The next night to ſhew how much he was altered from his former temper and belief, he did lye in his Chamber aforeſaid, ſuppoſedly haunted, and that ſame night with much joy, my Miſtreſs and I renew'd our pleaſures.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

How his Mistress supply'd him with money, even to superfluity; what ways he had to spend it. He is tempted to destruction by Correctors (alias) Clippers and Coyners (alias) Matter-men.

I Found my Estate to encrease abundantly, for I was half sharer my self with my Master, my Mistress she put in for one too, which I had likewise; so that the good man receiv'd but the *fourth*. I had been (since my return) very sparing in my expence, having laid up my money securely: But now finding out another *rich Mine*, I thought I should be too rich, unless a contriv'd ways to *draw out* as well as *put in*.

In the first place, I thought good to buy a brace of good Geldings, for by that means I could meet whom I pleas'd, though a dozen or sixteen miles distant, and so by the quickness of my return come home undiscovered: If occasion should serve, they might very well serve for the *High Pad*. These I bought, and where they stood I had four or five several suits, either to Ride withall, (using variety that I might pass *incognito*) or to wear when I did intend

ntend to appear ſplendidly to my peculiar friends; and then the Prodigal himſelf did not ſpend his money more profuſely than my ſelf.

I judge it unneceſſary to relate how, and in vvhat manner I disburſt great ſumms, ſince there are few that are addicted to pleaſure, and have money, but know how to lay it out to the ſatisfaction of their deſires, that is, to pleaſe all their ſenſes. My Miſtreſs ſeldome ſaw a piece of Gold in her Husband's hands, or ſome large and great piece of Silver, but ſhe vvould be begging it of him, for no other intent but to give it me, vvhich ſhe took delight in, withall, knowing that frequent preſents very much ingage the affection.

My Maſter ſeldome deni'd her, for, (like a Cuckold he doted on his Wife) but if he did, ſhe would take pet, and would not eat, have the forehead bound down vvith a croſs-cloath, look pitifully, and the like. If he ask'd her vvhat ſhe ail'd, or vvhat ſhe vvas troubled at, ſhe vvould ſay, at nothing more then your unkindneſs, and then vveep bitterly; for, like a right *Hypocrite*, ſhe had *tears at command*. The *Dotard* would *melt* too, ſometimes the great Calf crying, and ſobbing, like a Child that hath loſt its Bread and Butter: Then to make his attonement, he muſt procure her two or three pieces, if he hath them not in the houſe, otherwiſe it ſhall coſt him as much more vvealth on the Doctor, of vvhom ſhe vvould often prerend to take Phyſick, but it ſhould be onely rich *Cordials*, *ſtrengthning Jellies*, vvith ſuch like *Provocatives* to *Venery*.

For my own part, I vvas not idle in the mean time, laying up like the carefull Bee for Winter. We return'd great ſums of Money every day, vvhich

which an acquaintance of mine knew very well; and he being daily in the company of a fellow, who was both Coyner and Clipper, it seems a decay'd Goldsmith, undone by the study of Chymistry, but now liv'd by some particular part thereof, as the transmutation of Metal, or so forth.

This man he informs that he knew a young Casheer, that he thought he could work to their purpose, who was very well qualifi'd for it. An appointed time for meeting was agreed upon between them, which was made known to me; I thought of no other design but to be merry. Being met, we drank stiffly, but ever and anon the stranger would beseech me to favour him with my future acquaintance, that he should think himself very happy, if I would admit him into a familiarity. I could do no less then promise so much, and so laying aside ceremonies, we entered into a very familiar discourse. But for that night there was nothing propounded, neither was it thought convenient: several times we met, (not without great expence) so that now we were grown intimately acquainted. Our discourse hapned on a time to be about Chymistry, I was forc'd to be mute, as not understanding any thing thereof; yet I could not but admire, to hear my new friend relate what admirable Rarities he could perform in that misterious Art, and thereupon shew'd me a piece of Gold, demanding my opinion, what I thought of it? I told him I could judge no less, but that it was what it seem'd to be; he smilingly repli'd, no wonder that this should deceive you, since it will do the like to the most critical Goldsmith about the Town: No doubt, said he, you have heard of the

Philoso-

Philoſopher's Stone, and vvhat vaſt Eſtates ſome have miſ-ſpent in the ſearch thereof, how ineffectual the labour of ſuch hath been, the miſerableneſs of their condition makes apparent. Others and not a few have pretended they have obtain'd the maſtery thereof, for no other intent then to delude ſome vvealthy credulous perſon, making ſome ridiculous experiments to confirm his belief, and at laſt *extract* him to the very *lees* of his Eſtate. I ſhall not deludingly pretend to any thing, but vvhat I vvill perform, vvhich your own eyes ſhall atteſt.

Hereupon, he ſhew'd me various pieces, both Gold and Silver, which are the effects (ſaid he) of my own labour and pains, imploy'd in an Art I have found out by the curious ſearch and induſtry of my brain, vvith vvhich I can convert Copper into that Metal vvhich current money is compos'd of, either of vvhich, according to the Tincture I ſhall give it. And to be plainer vvith you, out of that great love I have born ever ſince I firſt ſaw you, and that my actions ſhall make it apparent, ſee here this piece, according to the term of Art given, it is call'd a *black Dog*, with *Queen Elizabeths Head* thereon, vvhich is only Pewter double waſh'd. This here is a *George Platereon*, being all Copper vvithin, and only a thin Plate about it. Another call'd *Compoſitum*, which is a mixt Metal, and vvill both *touch* and *cut*, but vvill not indure the fiery teſt. He gave me the ſight likewiſe of pieces of *eight*, *half pieces*, and *quarter pieces*. Then again, (ſaid he) our own Coyn vve uſually call *Engliſh* Cloth, the other *Spaniſh*; the prices vvhereof are ſeveral, according to their goodneſs and fineneſs: The beſt you may have for 15 *ſh.* the yard.

Now

Now to the intent that *I* may compleat your happineſs here, if enjoyment of Wealth vvill do it, *I* vvould adviſe you to take ſome of every ſort, and ſo mingle it vvith the reſt of your good caſh, proportionably to the ſumm. Let me add one thing more, if any large money comes to your hand, lay it aſide for me, which, after *I* have corrected a little, (for *broad brimd Hats are not now in faſhion*) a vvill return it, allowing you 18 pence *per* pound intereſt.

I gave him all this vvhile great attention, vvithout the leaſt interruption, but he here making a ſtop, *I* thought he expected my Replication; which vvas to this effect, That I thank'd him cordially for his reſpects, which I believ'd vvere real, having us'd that freedom vvith me, that I did not in the leaſt queſtion the greatneſs of profit that vvould redound by the acceptance of his proffer; but it being a matter of the greateſt conſequence and higheſt concern, I deſired I might have ſome time for conſideration. This anſwer made him look blank, fearing leaſt I made a demur onely to betray him, ſo that I ſaw by his countenance, he vviſh'd he had been more ſparing in his expreſſions. I muſt needs confeſs, I trembled all the time I vvas in his company, vvherefore I made all the haſt I could to be gone, giving him to underſtand, that, after ſerious conſultation vvith my ſelf, I vvould ſend him an anſwer by my friend, and ſo I took my leave of him. The vvhole night following I ſpent in weighing his Propoſals in the ballance of profit and preſervation: I quickly found that Life's preſervation out-weigh'd all other intereſt, and that honour, riches, and pleaſure, would avail little to that man that was riding *Poſt*

to

to the *Gallowes.* Though I had committed several things, that might come within the verge of an Indictment, yet I always shunned such actions as bore the inscription in their front, both of Criminal and Capital. To be as good as my promise I sent my Chymist these consequent Lines.

SIR,

You seemingly do proffer fair, but know,
Hanging attends such kindnesses you show.
The hope of profit tempts me; loss of life
O're powers perswasions, and so ends the strife.
Had I two Lives, my deeds should make it known,
How little I would care to hazard one;
But having solely one, I will not try
Its loss, as yet I have no mind to die.
Should we proceed then, and be taken in it.
Death and damnation seize us in a minute.
Cease then, and let your fancy's suit with mine.
We'l plot no Treason, *but to get good* Wine:
That being had, let each man's face *declare*
Th' Indian Mines *are not so* rich *as ours are;*
If we want Coyn, the best way I suppose,
Is to transmute the Metal *of my* Nose.

I never receiv'd any answer, to what I wrote, neither did I ever see my new friend after, which was according to my own desire.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

He breaketh his Maſter (by the help of his Miſtreſs) and ſo ſets up for himſelf with that money he had unlawfully gotten in his Apprentiſhip, and credit beſides; what a trick he ſerved his Maſter at laſt, his Maſter and Miſtreſs ſoon after dy'd.

NOw I had ſerv'd my time, and was accordingly made free; but ſollicited to ſtay ſome longer time as a Journey-man, which I conſented to, knowing it could not be long: for we had ſo purloined from him, that it was impoſſible for him to ſubſiſt any longer. His Creditors viſited him daily, ſo that now his whole time was taken up in ſtudying fair promiſing words to ſatisfie them for the preſent, and tell them when they *ſhould come again.* My Maſter perceiving the danger he was in, would neither ſtir abroad, no, not ſo much as come into the Shop. My Maſter ſtood now upon the brow of a very high Hill, and being forc'd to deſcend, I reſolv'd to ſave him the labour, and ſo threw him down headlong.

By this time I had convey'd away a ſufficient quantity of his Goods, intending them for my own uſe; and ſtow'd them in a Warehouſe which I had

had lately taken privately for my purpoſe. My Maſter one night told me his intended deſign, that he was reſolv'd to pack up all his Goods, and to gather in what Moneys he could, and ſo take his Wife with him for *Ireland*. I thought I ſhould have dy'd at firſt when I heard him talk of carrying his Wife with him, and could not forbear dropping ſome tears, which he perceiving, his trickled down his Cheeks to bear mine company; Well now, ſaid he, I ſee thou loveſt me too, as well as thou haſt hitherto prov'd faithful. But the deareſt friends muſt part, (and with that he wept again like a Child) however my comfort is, I hope we ſhall ſee each other in *Heaven*. I thought with my ſelf, I had rath r ſee him in the *Counter*. And from that minute I contriv'd how I might effect it: For at that time I ſhould never have been able to have brookt a ſeparation between my Miſtreſs and ſelf, eſpecially at ſo great diſtance. She and I often conſulted what to do; Sometimes we were in the mind to take what money the *old fool* had, and ſo run away together, with many ſtratagems which we propounded, but were rejected as no wayes expedient nor convenient. At laſt I reſolv'd on this, that he ſhould acquaint her ſelf of the exact time and way he intended to go, and ſo inform me thereof. I receiv'd information in a ſhort time after that, before break of day, at ſuch a time he would take Horſe at *Iſlington*, and ſo for *Weſtcheſter*. I immediately ſent away word to one of his cheifeſt Creditors, making known to him the ſumm and ſubſtance of every thing, and, that if he ever expected to receive what was due to him, he muſt at ſuch a time have Officers ready to way-lay him,

in

in order to his arrest, which was punctually done according to what instructions I sent him in a Letter, without a name subscribed thereunto. He had not been long in custody, before I was sent for, to advise with him what was best to be done in this his great extremity and perplexity. I could do no less then seemingly condole his misfortunes, and withal seem'd to be very active to his assistance, running up and down to his Creditors to bring them to a compliance; but he had been better to have sent some person else as solicitor in his business, for by my means I made his wound incureable. Seeing there was no remedy but patiently to endure his inevitable imprisonment, he got an *Horse* (as some men term it) alias a *Dunce facias*, and so remov'd himself to *Ludgate*, where he had not been long e're he dy'd for grief.

In the mean time my Mistress had secured what he had, which I enjoy'd. I had now an House and Shop of mine own, very well furnisht; but withal I was grown so deboist and profusively lavish, that I seldom was at home but at night, and then in bed with my Mistress, who was very importunate with me to marry her: I confess I lov'd her intirely as my *Mistress*, or *Whore*, but I hated her as my *Wife*. She now found her self with Child, whereupon (taking *upon her my duty*) she daily *prest* me to save her Credit. But I delay'd putting her off continually with specious pretences, which her love and facileness easily swallow'd. The time of her delivery approaching, I went down into the Country with her, and because it was at hand I stay'd to see the event: Within a short while she fell in labour, (now because we were known for

no other then Man and Wife,) when her throws came upon her, ſhe would not let me ſtir out of the room. She call'd me haſtily to her, and getting my hand within hers; Farewel, ſaid ſhe, I die for thee, thy laſt unkindneſs is not performing thy promiſe, and not returning love anſwerable to mine, hath untimely yielded my days; with that ſhe groan'd, and then uſing her former expreſſions, cry'd out, Love my memory however, ſince I die for thee. She utter'd not one word afterwards, being as good as her word: The good Woman lookt ſtrangely on me, every one paſsing their verdict, and all concluding her none of my Wife. The *firſt Chriſtians* under the great *Perſecution* ſuffered not in 500 years ſo many ſeveral ways, as I did in within five hours by the peoples Tongues. I muſt needs ſay, I took it very much to heart that report which made *Richard* the *Second* alive ſo often after he was *dead*, ſhould *kill* me as *often* whileſt *alive*, deſiring them at laſt to wave their Cenſures, (which they expreſt publickly) I intreated them with all the Rhetorick I could produce to indeavour the reviving of my Wife, which if paſt recovery to uſe means to preſerve the Child. In a ſhort time they told me, that was dead likewiſe. At firſt I ſhow'd much grief, which was unfeigned, being not ſo much afflicted for the loſs of her, as affected with thoſe words ſhe utter'd when ſhe breathed her laſt. I was too conſcious of my own guilt, and therefore they made the deeper impreſſion in my very Soul.

But all theſe perturbations of mind I diſsipated with a glaſs or two of Canary, which was the common antidote I us'd againſt care, ſorrow, and vexation,

vexation, *&c.* I now provided things neceſſary for her Funeral, which were not vulgar, which I might the better do having made my ſelf her Executor before, taking all ſhe had into my cuſtody. In memorial of her and her fidelity, I wrote this Epitaph on her Tomb-ſtone.

Women they ſay will lye, *but now I ſee,*
'Tis falſe, to th' laſt ſhe ſpeaks the truth *to me.*
Farewell ſaid ſhe, I thought my grief t'have hid,
I die for love of thee,----*and ſo ſhe did.*
Here with her lies her Child, that ſtrove in vain,
To untomb it ſelf, to be intomb'd again.
But reſt my babe, thy cares with life are gone,
Thou 'lt riſe again, *though now a ſetting Sun.*
Though wonders ceaſe, *thy Mothers death doth prove;*
They may revive, for ſhe did die for love.

CHAP. *XVI.*

His credit becomes ſuſpected by his exorbitant manner of living in Drinking, Whoring, Gaming, &c. He thinks to ſawder up that crack by Marriage, *he is deceived both in Perſon and Portion.*

REturning to mine own Habitation, I found that my ſo long abſence had rais'd a jealouſie in my Neighbours breaſts that I was run away, which reſted not there, but reſted like a *Canker*, ſo that this flying report came to ſome of my Creditors ears, which made them both impatient and impor-

importunate with me for their moneys; I wonder'd whence proceeded their unexpected haste. Some that would not be put off with promises I was forc'd to pay; from others *I* obtain'd a little longer forbearance, which gave me but liberty to prosecute my former courses. If I was at the Tavern, I was either drunk, ingag'd in a quarrel, and so involv'd in blood, or else at play, if not at a Bawdy house, which places I could not refrain from frequenting, though I kept one of *mine own at home*. For I would not entertain a Maid, but what was more then ordinarily handsom, whom I commonly vitiated either by presents, or promises if I got them with Child. When I was weary of one, I pay'd her off with some addition to her wages, and entertain'd another, who would in a short time be wrought upon as well as her predecessors, being ambitious, to lie with her Master, and vainly hopeing that to be the first step to her preferment, thinking of nothing presently but marrying, and so be Mistress. In three years that I liv'd as a Master I had nine Illegitimates, which I knew, four whereof were begotten of my Maids, which put me to a vast expence: Two of the Mothers would have forc'd me to have marry'd them, or allow'd them competent maintenance, (for they were subtil cunning baggages) had I not by a wile got them aboard, and never heard of them since. Besides two or three terrible *Claps* which cost me a considerable sum in their cure: This distemper, as it caused a *consumption* in my Pocket, so it impair'd my wonted strength and almost spoiled my----

For

For now it is much like Paul's *Seeple turn'd*
A ſtately thing before the top *was* burn'd.

I now began to be ſenſible of my folly, and ſo reſolv'd to take up in time, and redeem by degrees my loſt credit by a temperate ſober life; but that I found I had waſted my ſelf extreamly, by which means I became leſs capable of reacting what I had before done, and my mind in a manner ſatiated; I queſtion whether I ſhould have had now ſuch penitent thoughts. For a while I kept my Shop diligently and conſtantly; I would not drink with any but at home; my ſudden alteration made people admire, and the ſuddenneſs of my reformation was the common diſcourſe of all my Neighbours: The Parſon of our Parish hearing of my ſtrange alteration, came to me, which I admir'd at; For before, he that had the leaſt care or reſpect of his Reputation, would avoid all occaſions of being ſeen in my company, leaſt they might be ſuſpected extravagant and deboiſt.

Pares cum paribus facilime Congregantur.
Birds of a Feather will flock together.

The ſhortneſs of his hair declar'd him a *Circumciſion of the old man*, but his *triple cap*, or three *caps* on his head ſhow'd though he hated the very name of *Rome* or *Babylon*, yet he loved formerly a Whore *in private, though common*. His Cloak was *fac'd* down with *zeal* before, and his Band appear'd but as a *broad hem*; to ſhow that a *hem*, with *two or three formal ſpits*, or a feigned Cough, was the uſual ſupply of his diſcourſe when he had *thraſht* himſelf

in a *Cloak*, out of *breath* in the *Pulpit*. His looks reſembled the *bleer ey'd printing at Geneva* (and his face like that courſe ſort of ragged paper on which they work off their impreſſions. After he had ſet his face into a Platform, he delivered himſelf. I ſhall not relate exactly his own canting words, or what he borrowed from Scripture, being ſenſible, *non eſt tutum ludere cum ſacris*; but give you the ſubſtance, which was firſt a reproof for my extravagancies; ſecondly, ſome general inſtructions, (pickt out at common place books (for my future practice; and laſtly ſome encouragements drawn from various motives to proceed (without looking back) in the ways of *Holineſs*: on which three points he ran *diviſions* ſt angely, till Dinner time, and then his ſtomack *petition'd him* to *ſhut his mouth*, leaſt it ſhould be depriv'd of its appetite by receiving in too much air.

In this ſeeming ſtrictneſs of life I liv'd two or three months, and now ſome began to have charitable thoughts of my Soul; and that I might regain my runnings out by future diligence and induſtry.

I had ſeveral *Matches* offer'd me, which I ſaw, but liked them not; for I had always been a general Lover, and could not now come to particulars. At laſt it was my misfortune to ſee one, whom I was wiſht to; which at firſt ſight robb'd me at once, both of my ſelf and good company.

Formerly I was pleaſant and affable, deſirous and deſired of good ſociety, but never liv'd till now an *Anchorite* on Earth. Neither did I ever till now tie up mine eyes to one particular face, giving them free liberty to wander. But now at laſt I fell from my primitive liberty, loſing it totally, by

dotage

dotage on a creature, and that a Woman too: It was Gods just judgment on me for my manifold sins to throw this thing in my way for me to stumble at. And it will appear in its due place that she was a *bow'd token* of my *Makers* displeasure sent me, for she was Crooked.

CHAP. XIV.

How he was Married, and what kind of thing his Wife.

I made strict enquiry after the condition of my intended Wifes Parents, and found by report they were very wealthy. In a short time we had conference together about the Portion, and my Estate, and therein we were all satisfied. My Courtship was very noble, yet not prodigal, for fear of giving offence; and in a little while we were Marry'd. By her looks I thought her so modest, that an unchaste thought durst not enter into her head, since all immodest expressions she banished from her ears.

The first night I thought to have had the first *taste*, but my experience told me the *Tarriers* had been there before. This struck me into an amazement, that there should appear such Virgin whiteness, and the extract of innocence in her face, yet be guilty of a crime so notorious. Much perplext I was, but durst not vent my self, what was more then bare suspition. In one half years time

what I intended to conceal could be hid no longer, being brought to bed three months before her time; and yet the Bawd her Midwife would make me believe this was usual; and that Children brought forth at six months might live.

Now began our domestick civil wars, which was carried on with such fury between us, that there was hardly an Utensil in the Kitchin that could rest in quiet for flying about our ears continually. My Wife acted the silent Woman to the life: Before we were married all her answers were very short, comprehended within the two Monosyllables of I and No; and those too must be forcibly extracted from her. But now her tongue wag'd in perpetual motion, and her voice so shrill and loud, that it would be heard distinctly, though a piece of Ordinance were discharg'd neer her at the same time. Frequent were her complaints to her Father and Mother, which alienated their affection from me, so that their onely study was how to be rid of me. Her forgeries (to excuse her own *Devilry*) had so instigated them, that they sought my ruine. Besides, they laid an *imbargo* on the rest of my Wifes portion unpaid; advising her withal to secure what she could, for her own self preservation. She followed their instructions so exactly, that in a short time I found my self in a very declining condition, yet knew not the cause till it was too late, conveying away both my Goods and money, some whereof went to supply the necessities of her Stallion.

I was all along jealous of this, though I could not conclude her altogether so capable. But my doubts and fears which of all are the sharpest passions,

ſions, could not turn my diſtemper into a diſeaſe (although they lookt through falſe Opticks, making things appear like evening shadows, diſproportionable to the truth, and ſtrangely longer then the true ſubſtance) till knowledg hereof (confirm'd me by the witneſſes of my eyes) had baniſht bare ſuſpition.

Which was thus, One night I cauſed my ſelf to be brought home by a Porter as dead drunk, my Wife received me in that condition (I perceiv'd by peeping out of my eye-lids) with much ſatisfaction, and vvas immediately carryed up to bed, vvith much difficulty they undreſt me, pretending my ſelf aſleep all this while, and ſo they left me. It ſeems by the ſtory that my wife preſently ſent avvay my *Maid* (which vvas her Pimp) to her friend to come at ſuch an hour: About nine of the Clock the *Maid* vvas poſted to bed; and about ten I heard one ſmall knock at the door, he needed not to knock there any longer, for there vvas one below that was ready to receive him. When I judg'd they vvere incircled in each others armes, (vvhich I underſtood by hearkning at the bottom of the Stairs, and thereby knevv vvhere about they vvere; I ran in upon them with my Sword (which I had prepared ready) and thinking to have ran them through the body, intending to make a paſſage for their Souls eſcape, I paſt my Svvord through the fleſhy part of both their thighs. At vvhich they made a moſt hideous out-cry, ſo that the *Maid* came running dovvn, and a Watchman that ſtood juſt at my door hearing the noiſe, knockt at the door, to know vvhat vvas the matter: the maid apprehending the danger, let him in, vvho by the help of his Candle

never

never ſaw ſo ſtrange a ſight. For I had ſo pind them together that they could not ſtir. I durſt ſwear my tool was then much ſtiffer then his. As well as they could ſpeak they both begg'd their pardon for their lives onely, which I granted, as looking on my revenge ſomewhat ſatisfied.

My Gentleman I diſmiſt, but as for his *Miſtreſs* I was forced to ſend for a Chyrurgeon, whoſe wound needed no probing, but tenting, for it was through and through. There was no concealing of what was done; wherefore in the morning early I acquainted her Parents with what had happen'd laſt night. Inſiſting further, that ſince ſhe had inſtead of putting off handſomely the Chain of Matrimony, rudely broke it, it ſhould be her own damage; neither would I be at the coſt of a viſitation to repair the breach. To which I added that had I deny'd her things requiſite or neceſſary, or not performed duly my duty, ſhe might have had ſome pretence for her ſlighting me, and look upon me onely as a falſe Crow ſet up in a Garden, to keep others from the fruit it cannot taſte it ſelf. But ſince it was otherwiſe, and that ſhe had nothing to object againſt me, but onely ſometimes curbing her inordinate deſires; I wisht them to ſave me the labour of having the Law to tear her from me, but that they would remove her elſewhere.

They reply'd but little, haſtning to their Daughter, and fearing worſe miſchief might enſue, they inſtantly convey'd her into the Country. She had not remain'd there long, before she was Cur'd, and not enduring to be confin'd to ſolitarineſs, repair'd again to the City, where now she lives, as ſuch do that keeps Civet Cats; but I hear

she

she is very reserv'd to all but such she knows she may intrust her self with. But let her go with these Lines pin'd to her back.

If Husbands are the Head, then Wises I see
By consequent must needs the body be.
She is a Monster then, hence may be said
That can survive the losing of her Head,
Inverting Natures course, she doth not fail
To live not by her Head, but working tail;
Which lately wrought so much, I heard some say,
She might have spent her self to death that way.
Now fare thee well, for thou art dead to me,
So would I have such headless trunks to be.
See, see, she walks again, and doubtless will
If I don't exercise her, haunt me still.
why do I call her Ghost thus, since she's known
By some of late to have both flesh and bone.
Well she's the Centaurs body, I the rest,
But never read his front e're bore a crest,
For this same cause I did make use of art,
And from this she beast took my manly part (well
Now for some Squire to mount her that can ride
And let him ride her off her legs to Bridewell.

I must confess my own faults as well as condemn others; which was, I was too inquisitive after that which the more I knew of would the more disturb me. Of all things the less we know, the better. Curiosity in this renders a man as ridiculous as a Coxcomb, as that Cuckold Sir *John Suckling* mentioneth, who made diligent enquiry, wether he was made so in a bed, or on a Couch, and whether his duty officiating Cavalier pull'd off his Spurs first or not, &c. Well

Well it was my hard fate to Marry thus like one doom'd to prison, who expecting to lie in a private room is confined to the Hole. Had I married the best, I believe I should have found my self in the Stocks. 'Tis strange that I of all men should be deceiv'd by this thing that was like a box bearing drugs not suitable to the inscription. Had not my passion hung in my eyes, when I lookt into her disposition and carriage I might have easily understood that her behaviour, in the presence of me was onely like action on a publick Stage, and that the evil of her natural inclinations were hid from me under the vail of silence and seeming modesty. And indeed my pallate was bed-ridden, and so scare sensible of sauce, much less of meat. But since I have had such ill luck in marriage, which some vainly and falsly account a merry-age, I shall in the ensuing Discourse, giving you some instruction or advice as Landmarks. For having split upon this Rock, I may the better be a Pylot to another that would sail this way

---

CHAP. XVIII.

Some Observations concerning Love and Women; selected out of the choycest Commentators on their nature, together with his own experimental reflections.

LOve tis confest is a Natural distemper, a kind of small Pox, most have either had it, or is to expect it, and the sooner the better. Surely I was never

never well cur'd on't, or else I had not thus fallen into a Relaps. Want of knowledg misguided me at first, and so I fell into a *Quagmire*; but I know not what possest me to ride afterwards into another on purpose. Love-seeds when it grows up to Matrimony is good for nothing, like some fruit trees which must be transplanted before they will bring forth any thing. And when Love in this nature doth seed, the encrease thereof is dissatisfaction, sorrow and vexation multiplied. This aforementioned is not truly love but lust; for I cannot believe that that noble passion can be the ruine of its subject; neither would I have it disparaged by so unworthy an object as a woman. If there be Love it should be to Heaven, a male friend, relations, or our Countries preservation, and not to a Female piece of imperfection. And yet nothing will serve the turn, but monopolizing it by Marriage, because he would make it surely our own, and nevertheless our own till then. For if she be young, she is like an Hawk upon her wing; and if she be handsome, she is the more subject to go out at check. Faulkners that can but seldom spring right game, should still have something to take them down. The lure to which all stoop in this World, is either garnisht with profit or pleasure, and when you cannot throw her the one, you must be content to shew out the other. Consider again that woman (besides the trouble) is a Rent-charge which though the curiosity of man hath often inclos'd, yet he cannot for his life stop so well one gap, but it will lie open for any stragler, by which means it seldom improves or becomes fruitful. And why should a woman be deny'd the

liberty

liberty of breaking a pane in her own window, or not admitted the freedom of regress to her own falliport, letting in whom she esteems as friends. If you will not give them the permission, you must be forc'd to wink when you take it, or do worse, cross them, and they will endeavour the not leaving a cross in your Pocket. Take it which way you will, Marriage is the dearest way of curing love. Faring with such as it doth with those for the most part that at great charges wall in grounds and plant, who cheaper might have eaten Mellons elsewhere then Cucumbers in their own Garden. Besides, it is a gross piece of ignorance to be bound up to love for an age, when the cause of love may perish for a month, and then the effect will follow. If it be natures paint in the face, that doth induce you; those beautiful flowers of red and white, a disease will quickly wither, if not, ravishing time will deflowre the choicest beauty.

But the ill consequents of Marriage are more to be considered, which are commonly drawn from the evil inclinations of that Sex. *Eve* by stumbling at the Serpents solicitations cast her Husband out of Paradice; nor are her Daughters surer of foot being foundred by the heat of lust and pride. It were something if Marriage could answer the expectation of all she boasts the cure of; for instead of quenching the hot coals of concupiscence, it aggravates the simple sin of Fornication, making it sprout into Adultery. What might be said more as to this subject, I shall refer the Reader to the Writings of that ingenious Gentleman Mr. *Francis Osborne.* If any more (like boys stript and stand shivering about the brink) are ready to leap into

Love's

Loves Whirlepit, and so endanger the loss of themselves, let them first look upon Love to be an idle fancy, and Wedlock of a dangerous consequence. If I could perswade you from loving, one would think the other then would be disregarded, but some to their cost can speak the contrary. In the first place, marry none but whom you love, for he that marries where he doth not love, will love where he did not marry. If you are prone to love one particular person, some are of opinion that travel is an excellent remedy: For absence doth in a kind remove the cause, removing the object. Others think that frequent visits (whereas the rarity of them indears the affection (may by a surprizal discover some defects, which though they cure not absolutely, yet they qualifie the vehement heat of an amorous Feavour; and as near as can be let it be unseasonably, either when she is in sickness or disorder, by that a man may know she is but mortal, and but a woman; the last would be enough to a wise man for an Antidote. Enter into discourse with her of things she daily hears not, and it will confirm the cure. Neither will it be amiss to contrive your self into the company of variety, especially such beauties which are generally cry'd up, and if you can, taste them all, (but now I think on't it is no matter, one is sufficient for a surfeit) for this Malady is better remedy'd this way, then by abstinence: good jovial company will much conduce to the cure.

But, I like not the prescription of Marriage, since it is the last and most dangerous receipt; like a kind of live Pigeons apply'd to the soals of the feet, which remedy to say truth, is worse then

the

the diſeaſe: Were it poſſible for a Woman to be conſtant to one, ſomething might be ſaid, but I never yet tried any which did not very much ſhow their diſpleaſures when offer'd ſome kindneſs, but never found any to refuſe them if opportunity and privacy of place admitted their reception, which have made me often in my own thoughts queſtion my mothers honeſty and fidelity to my Father.

VVhat I now utter is not deriv'd from prejudice to that Sex, grounded on my own *Wifes* diſloyalty; but experience tells me this, which moſt paſt ſixteen very well underſtand, that there are few *Women*, let them pretend what they pleaſe, but will yield to the temptations of the fleſh, and ſo much the ſooner, by how much she profeſſeth ſome new light, which is the *Ignis fatuus* that leads them into the *Quagmires* of all ſorts of erroneous Tenents. *With* this dark Lanthorn Light they dazle the eyes of ſuch as would pry into their actions, whiles behind in the dark they ſenſually ſatisfie themſelves undiſcovered.

Experience dictates what I here expreſs; for I have had converſe with ſeveral of theſe Religious pretenders that in the very act would very much inveigh againſt Adultery with their tongues, whileſt their bloods willingly conſented to the commiſsion of that ſin, and then immediately after ſeem extremely penſive, uſing theſe and ſuch like formal expreſsions; *Fie, fie, I wonder how you durſt ſin thus, even before the face of your Creator. Do you think he ſaw you not? yea verily, and you ſhall anſwer for what you have now done; whereas it could never have been done without a mutual conſent.*

They will make it their daily diſcourſe ſpeaking

ing against such whose natural inclinations have prompted them to unlawful satisfaction of their lusts, and yet they themselves are at the same time studying how they may secretly and securely accompliſh the same thing.

To conclude, Woman in general is the very extract of inconstancy, and therefore it is but a vain thing for any to think she can absolutely love one man. Such who are found constant to their Husbands, prefering their welfare before the indulging of their own by-respects, ought to be lookt on no less then Miracles of their Sex, by such who are acquainted generally with Female dispositions and actions.

CHAP. XIX

He cheats his Creditors by knaviſh breaking, and runs away for Ireland. *He is Shipwrackt on the Iſle of* Man.

WHilst my Credit was good, *I* thought good to make use of it, lest that failing, *I* should want an opportunity to march off with flying Colours. To raise my repute amongst my Neighbours (whom *I* knew would spread abroad what they had seen) *I* caus'd a Porter (whom *I* could intrust) to carry out privately an hundred pound, and a little while after to come with a trusty friend of mine with that, and five or six hundred pound bags more on his back, openly carrying them. Upon my receipt hereof, *I* presently tumbled the

Money out of the bag (which had really money in it) on the Counter, purposely making a great noise: having told it over (my friend standing by the while) I put it up, and pretending to lay that aside and take another, I took up the same again, so doing till I had told it over five or six times; then writing in publike view a Receipt, with much civility and respect I dismist my Gentleman. And thus I did thrice in a months time; so that by this means without suspition I conveyed away a great quantity of my Goods which people thought I had sold, and therefore thought me to have a great trade. Report hereby rendred me a man of vast dealing, so that now I had goods daily offer'd me, some whereof I receiv'd, promising to them payment at three months, others at six; whereas I intended they should stay till her had her twelve Apostles for her Jury. What Wares or Moneys I could take up, I did, not mattering at what rate. To some of the more wary sort I confest a judgement for their security. I needed not to have spoken in the Singular number, for I deluded four with my Judgements. What commodities I had, I converted into money by a bill of Sale, and so went away, leaving my Creditors to sue out a Statute of *Bankrupt* if they so pleas'd, which I valu'd not it once out of their reach. To my chiefest Creditor I sent these lines, to the intent he should not tax me with incivility for going away, and not sending him word.

Credit doth strengthen such whose Trades are weak,
But too much Credit Sir did make me break.
Credit to sinking Tradesmen is a prop,

But

But had you kept your Wares, I'de kept my Shop.
Pray do not blame me Sir, because I show
A way to pay those many debts you owe:
Which you may do, if you'l advised be,
Which is in short, prepare to follow me.
Believe me faithful Sir in what I say,
I went before, but to shew you the way:
But if you will not, don't lament your loss.
For in your Money I do bear the cross.
Grief will distract you, and destroy your wit;
Good Sir preserve it, for y' ave paid for it.

I rid post for *Holy-head* night and day, so that I arriv'd there in a very short time: going to dismount, I tumbled off, neither could I rise again; continually and unaccustomed riding had almost dislocated every bone in my body, notwithstanding it was swath'd for that purpose. The next day I made a shift to walk abroad to view the Rarities of the Town, but found nothing rare but handsome Women, Civility, and good Drink. In two days time we set Sail: we had not ran above three Leagues, before the Skye darkned; the Wind blew hard at South-East, and the Waves rose mountain high: In an hours time we were forc'd to cut our Masts by the board, and lightning the Ship as much as we could, let her drive. Every man fell to his Prayers, expecting every moment when they should be swallowed up by the Sea. As for my part, I now thought divine vengeance had overtaken me, and would reckon with me for all my Rogueries; I lookt on my self as *Jonas*, and was much troubled that others should suffer for my iniquities. About three a Clock in the morn-

ning we heard a hideous noiſe occaſioned by the beating of the Sea againſt the Rocks, which was ecchoed by the loud and lamentable cries of the Seamen, who knew now there was no hope for us. Now could *I* pray heartily, that had never pray'd in my life before; but my Devotion was ſoon ſpoiled, for the Ship ſtruck in between two Rocks. I lookt out, and methought the daſhing of the waves lookt perfectly like flaſhes of Fire. Here ſhe ſtuck a little while, which gave five of us opportunity to leap out upon a Rock: we were no ſooner there, before a wave fetcht her off, but brought her on again, and ſplit her all to pieces. We five in the mean time riding aſtride on a Rock behind one another, like ſo many Criminals on a *Woodden-Horſe*. Sometimes a wave would ſtrike clear over us, which indangered our waſhing off. Sometimes we thought to let go our hold, as looking upon our preſervation to be impoſſible; and withal imagining that the tide was coming in. At laſt the hindmoſt could hold no longer, but crying, *Lord have mercy on my Soul*, committed himſelf to the mercileſs Sea. Immediately came a tumbling Sea and waſht off the next; now did I expect that every wave would prove my Executioner. But it was not decreed (*I* ſuppoſe) that *I* ſhould be drown'd. Day broke, ſo that we could diſcern we were not a Coits caſt from the Shore, and that the Sea was ebbing. We waited not above an hour before we trawled to Shore, for go we could not, our joynts were ſo benum'd by the cold. We got up the Beach, and could diſcern a little way diſtant a ſmall Cottage; thither we repaired with much difficulty, and were kindly entertained, pittyed,

and

and informed where we were. We stay'd about a week in this Isle of Man, without one farthing expence. For the Inhabitants are generally very civil and courteous, and especially to Strangers. From thence we imbarkt for *Dublin.*

CHAP. XX.

His Arrival into Ireland : *he changeth his Name : what trick he serv'd his first Landlady ; all his Money being spent, and those Goods and Coyn likewise Shipwrackt which he expected to follow him.*

WE landed at a place called *Ringsend* about a mile from *Dublin. I* was askt whether *I* would have a Coach. Where are there any, said *I*? (for *I* lookt about me, and could see nothing like a Coach) the fellow lookt upon me to be a very ignorant person, because *I* understood not what he meant, and angerly spake thus : *By my Gossips hand, thou canst not see very much well, arra look here is one by thine own side.* It was a great while before *I* could tell what language he spoke, he did so tone his words; neither could *I* understand him, till one standing by interpreted him. As for his *Ringsend*-Coach, as he call'd it, it was Wheel-barrow fashion, only it had two Wheeles not much bigger then a large *Cheshire* Cheese: the Horse that drew this Princely-pygmy-Chariot, *I* at first mistook for an over-grown Masty ; but viewing him narrowly, found him the extract (by his shape) of

a *Scotch-Hobby*; well, up I mounted, but could not invent a name for the manner of my riding, for I was neither Coacht nor Carted, but I fancy'd my self (and that justly) as I was riding, to be some notorious Malefactor drawn on a Sledge to the place of Execution, which afterwards experimentally I found *Dublin* to be; many of its Inhabitants call this City *Divlin*, *quasi Divels Inn*, and very properly it is by them so term'd; for there is hardly a City in the World that entertains such variety of Devils Imps as that doth. If any knavishly break, murder, rob, or are desirous of Polygamy, they straightway repair thither, making that place, or the Kingdom in general their Azylum or Sanctuary. My first care was to plant my self conveniently; the next day I sent for a Barber to shave all my Hair off, ordering him to bring me a Perriwigg of an absolute contrary colour to mine own hair, to the intent, that if I should meet with any of my former acquaintance, they might not know me, whereby I should prevent their sending notice to any where I was. The truth of it is, in this disguize I hardly knew my self. The greatest difficulty I found, was to make my self familiar with my fictitious name. At first when my Landlady call'd me by that name, I either star'd her in the face, or lookt behind me, (not answering thereunto) thinking she had spoke to some man else: but had I not pretended to be thick of hearing, and so that by apologizing for my silence, my design might have been marr'd. I daily met with several I knew, but would not take the least cognizance of them.

In this manner I spent a moneth, but all this while no tidings of my Goods and Money; that which

which I had brought with me was all consumed. My Landlady (as it is customary there, having as little trust or faith as they have Religion) call'd upon me for what I ow'd her. For a little while I stopt her mouth, by telling her I had a considerable quantity of Goods and Money too coming, which I expected by every fair wind. A little while after I heard the Ship in which they were was cast away. Now did I absolutely conclude Gods just judgment attended my fraud and knavery. My loss I did not in the least discover to any, knowing I should reap at first onely some pitty, and afterwards be undervalued and disrespected. My Hostess again, was very importunate with me to have her Reckoning: I endeavoured to put her off, saying, I expected daily Bills of Exchange; but she would not believe me; for I perceiv'd that she had been often cheated with such delusions.

Now did I not know what to do: I thought good to try another way; she being a Widdow, I fancy'd I could work upon her Female frailty: I us'd all means possible to get her alone, which I did but seldom, and then did I make use of all my Rhetorick to perswade her into a belief, how dearly I lov'd her; she reply'd little, but would laugh at me till she held her sides again. I verily believe she understood my drift, which I might argue from her expressions. Sometimes she would say, Come, come away with these love-fooleries, and pay me what you owe. Then would I tell her all I enjoy'd, and my self too, were properly hers, and that she might take them when she pleas'd into her possession. No, no, she would say, my youthfull days are past, and it is time for me to look

Heavenwards; wherefore let fall your suit, &c.

Since words would no ways prevail, I resolv'd to try something else, knowing how difficult it is for a Woman when in bed to refuse a Venereal proffer. To that purpose one night I came softly into her Chamber, and groping with my hand for her face, I caught a man by the Beard: at which he awaked, and thinking the Devil was come to trim him, or rob him of his Wash-balls, would have cry'd out aloud, but that fear had so lockt up his voice, that his highest note was little louder then whispering; I could but just hear him say, *In the name of* —— ——— *what art?* I am, said I, (and then she wakt too) no Ghost, but a living witness of your leachery, to that intent I came hither to be fully satisfi'd of what I have a long time suspected. As for you Madam, *your youthful dayes are past*, but your lust will endure for ever. If this be your way to Heaven, why were you so uncharitable as not to let me go along with you? As for your part, Sir, *I* believe that you are traveling that way too; for if *I* mistake not, you lately came out of Purgatory.

To be short, they both intreated me to be silent, and retire to my own lodging, and that in the morning they would treat with me to my full satisfaction. This was what *I* aim'd at, though brought about otherwise then intended. Early they both came to me: the pious Gentlewoman being very tender of her credit, would forgive me my Debt, if *I* would not blemish her reputation by my report; her Gallant gave me ten pieces to bind the bargain: having gotten a discharge under her hand, I sealed our contract with an Oath and faithful promise

promise never to divulge their shame. The Gentleman (though his estate much exceeded hers) out of spight, I think, or vexation, to be so caught, *incontinently* married her, though all former sollicitations (which I understood were many) prov'd ineffectual.

CHAP. XXI.

He is driven to extreme necessity; he describes what it is to be indigent, by what he suffer'd in that condition.

THis ten pound *I* received from my old leacherous Dotard, made its *Exit* almost assoon as its entrance into my Pocket: by that sum *I* thought to have purchas'd Mountains in *Ireland* (and indeed there is too great plenty of them there,) by gaming; but experience told me afterwards that my designe was hazardous, and so it prov'd, for *I* met with a person that *bubled* me at Hazard, not leaving me a penny, and ingag'd besides for my proportion of the Reckoning. My Gamester dealt too hardly with me, yet it was but just, for *I* intended to show him as little favour, if compell'd to lye at my mercy, which *I* verily thought would be, having various Utensils about me to that purpose, but *I* was overmatcht.

I thought my self secure, for I could top,
By which I've forc'd some Cits to leave their shop.
I palm'd, and put the change upon them too;

I only ſtudyed how I might undo.
But now I'm met with, 'tis but juſt I ſee,
That he which others cheats, ſhould cheated be.

I return'd to my Lodging, (which was none of the beſt) with what anxiety and perturbation of mind I ſhall give any looſer leave to imagine, whilſt the remembrance thereof enforceth me to ſpeak, and I hope the Reader will give me that liberty, ſince the Proverb intaileth on the looſer that Priviledge. I acquainted my Landlord with my misfortune, who ſeem'd very much to condole me for the preſent, but it was afterwards the occaſion of his not crediting me. From hence I will adviſe all to ſpeak as little as they can of ills that betide them; but we cannot diſcourſe too much of the good that happens to us. Perceiving my Landlord grew cold, my ſpirit was too high to be any longer beholding to him but for my Lodging; wherefore I ſeldom came home till night. Neither would I make known my condition to any that knew me. Sometimes I ſhould meet with ſome in the ſtreet, who would ask me to drink with them: my uſual anſwer was, I came from it but even now: inſiſting farther, that ſuch a Gentleman, with two or three more beſides my ſelf had drank ſo much, and that I admir'd at my ſelf, for being ſo ſober; whereas to deal ingeniouſly, I had not drank one drop that day. Another ſeeing me, would ask me whether I would dine with him at the Ordinary? then would I pretend that my Lord------Gentleman over-perſwaded me to dine with him, and that we had ſuch variety, that I doubted my ſtomack had receiv'd ſome detriment there-

thereby; and therefore beg'd an excuse; whereas a dry crust taken out of my *Leather Cupboard* was all the varieties the *Gentleman-Usher* of my stomack, my throat I mean, had taken cognizance of that day. So hard it was too, that I would look this way, and that way, not daring to commit it to the engine of my Chops, unless there was none near me within a furlong; for had there been any near me, they would have sworn I was eating Wallnuts, shells & all. Now did I learn to drink Water, which necessity made me to commend as the most soveraign liquor, and most suitable to the body of man; otherwise *Adam* in Paradice would not have been without a cup of Ale.

Every morning I offer'd up my Devotions either to St. *Patrick*, or St. *James*, each of which have two excellent Wells dedicated to the honour of their Saintships. Thither did I repair constantly twice or thrice a day, after I had offer'd up the fumes of smoke (most commonly of none of the best Tobacco) *I* kneel'd, not using the common way of drinking out of the chained iron dish, but with greater adoration suckt it as it came through the conveyance. After a walk to *Kilmanum* (about a mile from *Dublin*) or some other place to prepare my stomack, I return'd to *Christ*-Church, frequently dining there with Sir *Richard Strang-bow:* Reflecting on his Cheer, and the Liquor of those two Saints, *I* cannot but tell you my thoughts of both.

Sir Richard Strang-bow *keeps an house where Wine*
And Bread some sup on, but few seldom dine.
Ask yet an hungry Rambler, and he'l say,

(*Though*

(Though not one bit came near his mouth that day)
He plentifully din'd with him, so let him still
Till he hath found his empty belly fill,
Where I ne're could, which made me hate in fine
Sir Richard Strang-bows *Feasts, St.* Patricks *Wine.*

I fasted so long, *I* had now almost forgot how to eat: for if casually *I* came where meat was, *I* often made a proffer to convey something to my mouth, but my lips understood not my meaning; for having been so long unaccustomed to their duty, knew not how to perform their *gaping* office. It was impossible at this time for the greatest fright to have made me foul my breeches, because *I* seldom us'd any thing that might cause excrements. And therefore *I* wondred to hear any enquire for an house of Office, since *I* had now left off going to stool. Once in five days *I* thought *I* stood in need of evacuating; but *I* was mistaken, for by discharging a blast of wind (whose fury scattered small stones underneath me) *I* found it only a fit of the Cholick. I shall deal plainly, should *I* have found a propensity, *I* would have been very unwilling to let any thing go out, since so little past into my belly. Some *Moveables I* had left, which *I* was forc'd to dispose of, to keep the passage of my guts open, which would frequently grumble against my stomack for detaining too long what was receiv'd, challenging a propriety therein. *I* thought it good policy not to buy any Belly-timber of a quick concoction; because, it should stay the longer within me. To this purpose *I* lookt on old Cheese to be food convenient; knowing that though it will disgest any thing else, yet it cannot

disgest

diſgeſt it ſelf; and as it cloſeth up the mouth of the ſtomack, ſo by its reſpective quality it locks up faſt the Poſtern of the Micro-coſm. Fleſh again (if *I* got any) *I* would ſwallow by whole-ſale, fearing leſt by chewing it, my ſtomack would too ſuddenly give it a paſſport to my *Hypo-gaſtrium*; by which means it would be immediately ready again, nay reſtleſs in the craving more. *I* ſeldom ſlept for the gnawing of my ſtomack, and the anguiſh of my guts, and for want of thoſe fumes which proceeding from Meat aſcended into the head, and ſo the cauſers of ſleep. If *I* chanc'd to nod at any time, *I* dream'd of nothing but eating, my fancy feeding that while as voraciouſly as an hunger-ſtarv'd hound on a ſhoulder of Mutton. *I* was driven to that paſs, *I* could not juſtly tell whether *I* was alive or not. Somtimes *I* was of the opinion that *I* dy'd in our Ship-wrack on the Iſle of *Man*, and that *I* was now a Soul in Purgatory.

Immediately after my arrival into this place, the Itch and *Bunniah*, or Flux, (the two grand Epidemical diſtempers of *Ireland*) gave me their welcome into their Country, attended by a great number of ſix-footed Gent. clad in a gray livery, with one ſingle liſt down the back; who all promiſed to ſtick to me and be my boſom-friends, neither would they forſake me as long as life laſted. But they like the reſt of the beſt and faireſt promiſing friends left me when fortune committed me priſoner to the mercileſs cruel hands of that accurſed Goaler, Poverty. *I* was grown ſo lean, that the Mungril *Scotch* and *Iriſh* Gentleman the Itch, finding not fleſh enough to feed on, gave me the *French* Complement, *Adieu pouvre Gentilhome.* The Flux

ſtaid

ſtaid with me as long as any thing was left in my belly, but finding no ſubſtance from my Guts, took his leave alſo, unkindly carrying away all that was within me. Their retinue perceiving they were like to feed on hard meat, there being little left but bones, whoſe teeth were incapable of faſtning thereon, reſolv'd to follow after; ſome making more then ordinary haſt, broke their necks off the cape of my Cloke, miſſing their footing, the threds thereof being ſpun out by time as fine as thoſe of *Arachnes* working.

To conclude, *I* was a meer walking *Skeleton*, my skin only ſerv'd as a mantle for my bones. But for wind, my belly would have contradicted an approved Philoſophical axiome, proving a *vacuum*.

One time paſſing by the Caſtle-Gate, a Souldier fir'd his Muſquet, and I proteſt methought my belly ſounded like a Drum at the report. Should *I* relate every particular wherein the malevolency of Fortune afflicted me, *I* ſhould much tire the Reader, as well as perplex my ſelf with the remembrance; wherefore I ſhall deſiſt, and give you leave to imagin the deplorableneſs of his condition, who hath neither Monies, Friends, nor Credit, & in a place where he is neither acquainted with the people, nor their Language.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

He falling accidentally into a ſtrange houſe, endeavours to build a ſconce, but is fruſtrated of his intent. The old Hoſteſs pitties him at firſt, and relieves him, and continually after feeds him for her own peculiar Diet; further inſiſting on the miſery he then endur'd.

I Was by this time grown ſo feeble by faſting, or by the manner of my feeding, which was either Cheeſe, or hard Eggs, (there being great plenty) that *I* could hardly go; and ſo light *I* was by continual ſmoking, that *I* queſtioned often whether *I* was not a meer fume my ſelf; fearing ſtill when *I* walkt abroad, to be extracted by the Sun for an exhalation. Fortune ſo favoured me one day, that *I* found a groat, which put me into an extaſie of joy. I know not what Magical power there was in that vaſt ſum of four pence, for in an inſtant, not knowing by what means, *I* found my ſelf in a victualing houſe, ſo ſpeedy was my conveyance, as if *I* had been riding ſome Dæmon through the air. *I* call'd for ſome meat, but my voice ſounded ſo hollow, as if *I* had ſpoken in a vault. Some ſaid, it was the Ecchoof ſome perſon ſpeaking in the next houſe: Others of the wiſer ſort believ'd me to be ſome *Spectrum*, or Apparition; and that the Devil had aſſum'd a body ſpeaking in that *Mortuum cadaver.*

ver. The truth it of is, 'twas something hard to determine, whether I spake or no, but that they might perceive my lips to open. There was a Physitian in the house at that time, who looking on me narrowly, openly proclaim'd that I was the workmanship of some Mortal, who having first gotten the Skeleton, or bones of a Man, had artificially skin'd them over, and that *German* Clock-work caus'd my motion. I would have laught heartily at their ridiculous apprehensions, but that I had forgot how. I had some Gall left in me still, which made me start up in as great a rage as my feeble body was able to declare, intending to demonstrate to them how grosly they were mistaken; but perceiving me to approach, they all fled but Mr. Doctor, whom shame retain'd, otherwise by a fit of an Ague (which just then possest him) I knew he would willingly have been gone too. *Speak* (said he tremblingly) *what art?* I was somewhat puzled at his question, for I knew not well what I was: I am a living man, said I. *Why then thou woulst have flesh*, said he. After several discourses to this purpose, I at length made him partly believe that I was no such thing he imagined. And yet he would be asking me still a many impertinent questions, as whether I could see; and his reason was, because he could discern no eyes. Whether I was born without eyes, or lost them since accidentally, *&c.* I was forc'd to tell him at last that it was the Country-disease that had reduc'd me to this condition. Hearing me say so, he pittied me much, and told me he would fetch instantly something that should do me much good. I thankt him, and away went Mr. Doctor.

The

The good Woman over-hearing our discourse drew near then confidently, and demanded what I would have? I told her any thing which was eatable, as far as a groat would go. She brought me some hot *Meat*, and setting it before me, went for some drink; but before she could return I had swallowed it all: she fetcht me more, which went the same way with as much celerity. But like Quick-silver it wrought quite through me, not staying a quarter of an hour.

The manner whereof was thus, About to pay my Reckoning my Groat got into a piece of paper. I fumbled a great while in my Pocket, but found it not; which put me even to my wits ends. At last drawing out some papers, and shaking them my Groat dropt; perceiving its fall might be dangerous, there being many holes in the Floor, I catcht after it; notwithstanding it fell upon the very brink of an hole; what with hast to recover it, and the fright the danger put me into, I discharged my self of every bit I had eaten. There was no body could say, I had foul'd my Breeches, or that I stunk; which I made appear to my Landlady by showing her what I had evacuated, but little differing from what I had eaten a quarter of an hour before. The good old woman perswaded me strongly to eat it again; for said she, it cannot be much the worse for just passing through you, and I will fry it if you so please. I thought I should now have dy'd with laughter at her strange proposition; but the woman star'd upon me, not knowing whither I grin'd or laught. Well, well, said she at last, if you will not eat such good victuals some body else shall. I offer'd her my Groat, which

she refus'd, telling me there was as much more to pay; I told her that was all the moneys I had about me, and that I would pay her the rest the next day.

But she for her part, thought it was unjust.
To listen to the arguments of trust.

And therefore told me plainly she would have her Reckoning. I bid her stay a while, then assoon as she had turn'd her back I attempted to march off, but my strengh failing me, I wanted swiftness, and so was brought back. I made her acquainted with my condition how miserable it was; I needed not many arguments to persuade any into that belief, for my person was the true Embleme of misery. She gave a serious attention to what I expresst, and at last melted into tears, commiserating my misfortunes; she caus'd instantly a bed to be warm'd, where being laid, she ordered a Cawdle to be made, and in fine shew'd a world of kindness to me, not imagining what she aim'd at. She would not let me stir out of my Bed but whilst it was making, for above a week; at the conclusion of which I began to recover a little colour in my cheeks, and grew indifferent strong, she gave me moneys in my Pocket, and told me I must walk into the fields with her. I blest my self, and that Angel that directed my feet to the finding that lost groat which was the occasion of my restitution to a condition of living again. By this time I imagined what my old Gentlewoman expected: wherefore, in the first place I acknowledg'd how much I was obliged to her matchless civilities, and that it was impossible for me to

return

return her answerable satisfaction. Rowling her pretty Piggs-eyes to and fro in her head, I require (said she) nothing but your Love. If it must needs be so (thought I) there is no way better then to let fancy form her beautifull; and so by the force of imagination I shall injoy as much pleasure as if lying with *Venus*, though in Conjunction with this *Succubus*. We us'd not many ceremonies, (like puling-whining Lovers that are alwayes saying Grace; but never fall to) but taking the convenience of a Ditch underneath a bushy-topt hedge we compleated our work. Had any seen us in this posture they would have concluded old Winter metamorphosed into an old Woman lying in a Dike, and that *Flora* was converted into a young man, and both in an unnatural Conjunction. Or that youthfull *Phœbus* had contracted his rays to court a lump of Ice, but with shame was forc'd to desist, finding his powerfull endeavours ineffectual in the production of a thaw. I now conceited my self fallen into an *Irish* bog; and I apprehended my danger the greater, because I found no rushes growing there, which is an observation of the people, judging the bogg passable which hath such things growing thereon. She now thought not any thing too good for me, and that which I call'd before a bog, I found afterwards to be a rich Mine. When ever I wanted a small sum, a kiss or two, or the saying I lov'd her, extracted so much as supplied my present occasions, if I wanted a summ considerable, why then a quarter of an hours discourse in private effected my desires. Most that knew me wondred what politick stratagems I us'd that I so suddenly wound my self out of that La-

borynth of all ſorts of miſeries, and that I appear'd both in feature and garb ſo excentrick to my former condition. I had as many pretences to blind the world as there were various ſuſpitions of pragmatick perſons. In ſhort, I was now very well apparell'd, well furnisht with moneys, I kept my Horſe, nay my Whore too; this I made uſe of for what ſhe was, the other for what ſhe had. So ſeemingly happy was the preſent ſtate of my life, that I deem'd it impoſsibly unalterable by any decree of fate.

CHAP. XXIII.

He makes a Ramble into the Country, takes ſome Obſervations as he travelleth; and is ſoundly beaten for attempting to board a ſmall Iriſh *Pinnace.*

I Began now to be ſomewhat weary of the City, and therefore reſolved to refreſh my ſelf with the Country Air. I acquainted my Patroneſs therewith; who with much regret condeſcended, conditionally two days ſhould be the utmoſt time of my abſence.

That morning I ſet forth, there was ſuch ſolemn leave taken between us, as if my voyage had been intended for the *Indies*. About to amount, ſhe retrived my intentions, claſping me in her armes; I ſhould rather have choſen the imbraces of a ſhe Bear, as thinking her breath far ſweeter; and truly I have often wondred at my recovery in ſo impure and unwholſom air. Being on Horſe-back

ſhe

she so bath'd her Cheeks with tears (wanting no moisture, deriv'd from an everlasting spring of humours distilling from her head) that you would have sworn she was the representation of the Pig-woman in *Ben's Bartholomew* fair. Had not her watry Flood-gates drown'd her eyes, I think she would have stood looking after me that way I rid till my return. Well there is no fool like the old doting fool: And were I again to love for interest, I would choose such a person. Your young skittish things that onely mind their pleasures, think they have done a man a courtesie that merits reward if they admit him into their private familiarity, because they find fond man so passionate and impatient in the prosecution of his desires: And then again, having variety of Courtiers, they are too sensible, that if one will not meddle with the bait, a second will nibble at it so long till he is caught with the hook. Whereas a woman stricken in years, and having lost her beautiful allurements is disregarded, and lookt on as no fit subject for Love to treat on; not but she may have as youthful desires as any; and if that way inclin'd, none so prone as she. For knowing she hath nothing but her wealth to attract withal, she will freely part with it for her self satisfaction, and that she may not lose her Stallion, constantly encourage him even to the exhausting of what she hath. *Moreover*, finding the man to answer her expectations, she studies all ways imaginable how to please him in every thing that he may please her in that one thing.

But to my purpose, coming to *Balle-more-Eustace*, a little beyound the Town, (which is in the County of *Wicklow*) there is a small River in the

Summer time not above knee deep, I perceived a young woman about to croſs it, drawing to the water, ſhe ſtood not on the niceties of modeſty, but pull'd up her Cloathes to the waſt. The ſight hereof ſtopt me, and as near as I could oppoſite to her. She minded me not, but came ſtraight over to me, and at about three yards diſtance let down her Coats. I obſerved ſo many excellencies that my blood began to boyl, and my fleſh was all of a flame. For her hair which naturally curled, and was plaited, was of a bright flaxen, each hair in the Sun glitter'd like a thred of Gold.

Here take notice by the way, that the Maids for the moſt part, Winter and Summer, go without any coverings on their head, which they waſh all over every night; the meaner ſort aſſoon as married wear Kerchers. She had an Angelical Countenance, onely ſomewhat brownish by the Suns frequent kiſſing of it; I know not whether I may adjudg that a deformity. The skin of her body might vye with Snow for whiteneſs: her plump thighs, *&c.* and round ſoft belly I muſt not ſpeak of, leaſt the Relation kindle as great a flame in you, as the ſight thereof did in me. I diſmounted and addreſt my ſelf to her in *Engliſh*, ſhe anſwer'd me in her own language, *ſhe underſtood me not*; Then did I make uſe of that little *Iriſh* I had learn'd, which were ſome fragments of lecherous expreſsions, to which ſhe replied, but I underſtood her not. To be brief, I ſo far prevailed that I got her into a ſmall Wood, in which the thick and ſpreading tops of the Trees ſeem'd to lay their heads together in conſpiracy to keep out not onely the Suns entry, but alſo the curious ſearch of any mortals eye. She permitted

me

me to kiss, dally, lay my hand on her thighs, &c. which onely were the Preludiums of what should follow. But herein I mistook, for their disposition are much different from the *English*. We use to say, that where we gain over any woman the liberty to use the hand, we cannot fail of doing what we most desire: Whereas quite contrary they will without the least opposition permit the first, but with the greatest difficulty admit of the last. For assoon as she saw me ready to engage, she cry'd out incessantly, *Whillallalloo*; and presently I could hear this ululation eccho'd. I had just recovered my Horse, when two or three fellows came running to me, the one with a Flaile, the rest with long Poles. The first salutation I received was from the Flaile which fail'd, but little of doing my business: the next my Horses Crupper receiv'd, the poor beast being civily bred, could do no less then return them a Congee with his leg, which made one of them fall on his knees to his Master, as if he had been Monarch of that Soyl. These two Rogues stood stiffly to me, in so much that I knew not what course to take. The Villains were so nimble that one of them were continually before me hindring my flight, while ſt the other drub'd me forward. I bethought my self of a Pistol I had in my Pocket charg'd without a bullet; I drew it, presented, and pretended I would fire if they desisted not; for these stupid fellows apprehended not the danger: perceiving how stupidly senseless they were, I fir'd it full in the face of him that fronted me, who verily believ'd he had been shot, and so out of conceit (for they are naturally very timorous) fell down as dead, the other seeing that, ran away as

swift as lightning, whereby I had leave to ride on, which I did (you may think) with no ordinary speed. Lovers may talk of their sufferings by their Mistress frowns, or obdurateness, but let any one judge of mine by the blows I receiv'd, sighing is nothing to fighting, and a few tears are not to come in competition with dry basting. Pox on them they made me out of conceit with love for six weeks after. I never thought of injoying a woman since, but the remembrance of those three Bog-trotters converted the hot fit of my amorous Fever into a cold one.

A little way from *Baltinglass* I took up my quarters for that night. The Inn I lay in was one story high, about the height of an extraordinary Pigsty, and there was one Chimney in it too, more then there is to be found in one of an 100 such Hovils. The good man wel-com'd me after his fashion, but I think an *Anthropophagus* or *Indian* Man-eater would have done it as civilly. I bid him set up my Horse by signes, (for that was the language we convers't in) but alass there was no other Stable but what was at the end of our Kitchin, our Dining room, Bed-chamber, Pigsty, Pantry, and Buttery, being all one without distinction or separation. Some few Wattles (as they call them) were plac'd above, that was our Hay-loft. The only door of our Inn was a large hurdle much like a sheep pen. The *Bannettee* or good wife of the house, could speak a little broken *English*. I askt her what I should have for Supper? *Thou shalt have a Supper said she for St. Patrick agra.* I staid an half hour expecting when she would lay down something to the fire, but instead thereof she brings me in a

Wooden

Wooden Platter a great many Leeks, in the bottom whereof was a good quantity of Bay-salt, and withal a loaf as black as if the Meal had been wetted with Inke. *Scotsh-on here, Chreest himself nor St. Patrick did ever eat better ting.* I could not forbear smiling, which put her into a great passion: For if a man eats not what they set before him, they think themselves highly affronted. Because I would please them (not knowing but that I might find as bad sawce here) I pretended to eat, conveying it into my Boots. After supper I askt them for a clean Pipe, the woman brought me one about an inch long, telling me it was very clean, for her Husband had not smoakt in it above ten times. I judg'd it to be the ruines of the first Pipe that was made, which was convey'd from one of that family to another, conditionally they should constantly smoke in it without burning it. They offer'd me some snuffe too (which is one of the greatest kindnesses they can either show or be shown. I call'd for some drink, (to try whether that corresponded with the rest) and so it did, for there was no swallowing it without chewing. Finding but little satisfaction I desir'd to go to Bed. That I should instantly they said, but I wondred where they intended to lay me. In a little while in came a lusty wench with a bundle of rushes on her head, my bed it seem'd by the sequel, which she spreading on the ground covered them with a *Caddow* or Rugg. Here I must lye or no where, patience was my only comfort; wherefore stripping my self to my Drawers and Stockins, I laid my self down. About two houres after came in two Cows, three or four Piggs, some Ducks and Geese, (which they brought not in before

fore out of civility to me) all their family being within doors, the good Man, his Wife, and two Daughters, ſtripping themſelves ſtark naked lay down altogether by my ſide, which ſeem'd ſomewhat ſtrange to me. I could hardly forbear the two young ones, but that my late misfortune was ſo freſh in my memory.

I could not ſleep all that night, wherefore very early I diſcharg'd my Reckoning, and ſo ſet forward for *Dublin* with all the expedition I could, not liking the Countrey entertainment. I would not ride the ſame way back as I came, to avoid my bone breakers; but it had been as well; for coming to a River that I muſt foar'd, I askt a fellow which was the ſafeſt place; he pretended no knowledge of what I ſaid, wherefore making ſigns to him, he anſwer'd me again with his hand directing me to ſuch a place; at the firſt ſtep my Horſe and I plung'd over head and ears, and had not my Horſe been ſtrong we had both periſhed. With much difficulty we got up the bank on the other ſide, and looking behind me, the villain was e'ne almoſt out of ſight. Such cauſeleſs revenge they frequently exerciſe towards the *Engliſh*, naturally hating us with a perfect antipathy. I returned at length to my old Hoſteſs, reſolving when next I undertook ſuch a journey, I would ſteer by the compaſs of other mens experience.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIV.

The manner of his ſtealing an Hogſhead of French *Wine from* the Cuſtome-houſe.

TRacing the ſtreets I chanc'd to caſt my eye on a fellow, the ſlowneſs of whoſe pace inform'd me of the idleneſs of his condition. His garb was ſo prepoſterouſly unſuitable, that a man could not poſſibly look on him without exceſſive laughter. To the intent you may participate with me in the ſame ſport I ſhall open his Wardrop. In general there was not any thing he did wear that had not ſometimes another property, and of which one might derive another Pedigree. The Hat he had on was deveſted of all Royal dignity, having loſt its crown, and yet his crime would not be allow'd of as capital. But what it wanted in one place was ſupplied in another, the brims whereof being ſo large they might have conveniently ſerv'd as a *Pent*-houſe for another beſides himſelf. But this ingenuous ſquire politickly had pin'd up the brims on one ſide, that he might have ſome light to diſcern his way; his Hat thus pin'd up on the one ſide lookt much like a trap door pull'd up. His Band was ſo torn and dirty as if he had but juſt come from ſome fray, and leaſt paſſion ſhould prove obnoxious, time had done him that courteſie to purge away his choler. In what condition his Doublet was behind I could plainly diſcover

through

through the holes of his Cloak, which generally was so transparent, that the rents and patches of several colours of his cloaths were as visible as if you had lookt through Lawn. The forepart of his Doublet and his Breeches I am confident were the off-spring of the Furniture of a Billiard Table. His Cloak proceeded from a Boat-tilt, whose Grandfather was an Horse-cloth; and I could not look on his Breeches but it put me in mind of the *Scotch* Flaggs that hung up in *Westminster*. His skirts were so liquor'd and greas'd, that in case of extremity they might have serv'd for belly-pieces, not using any thing but their own fatness to fry them in. By his countenance he seem'd like a man of courage and ingenuity, and so I could not chuse but endeavour his relief. Wherefore I accosted him, pretending I had seen him somewhere, but could not for the present call to mind the place. His necessity made him assent to what ever I said, and desiring his company to an Ale-house, he readily granted my request. By what unhappy accident he became thus miserable I know not, but the man was well furnisht both with natural and acquir'd parts. Having had various discourses of several matters, and that we began to be familiarly acquainted, I askt him why he rapt himself up so close in his Cloak? O Sir, said he, *(to be plain) I have a maim'd Doublet, and I have heard some say, there is nothing more prejudicial to a wound then the intromission of Air*; which that Network garment of yours (said I) will never be able to keep out. He reply'd, *'Tis true Sir, I find it so, but I wish it were a Net, for then I might employ my self by fishing.*

I was so well pleas'd in my new acquaintance, that

that (bidding him ſtay there till my return, which should be ſpeedy) I went and procur'd him all things neceſſary for to cover his nakedneſs, the laſt thing he put on was his Shoes, finding them to have Soals they added new life to him.

But did before in one condition roul,
And both appear'd as if they had no Soul.

Having thus caſt (Colt-like) his ragged Coat, I was not aſhamed to walk with him in the ſtreets; coming to the Cuſtom-houſe we ſaw ſeveral Pipes and *Hogsheads of Wine*. Viewing all the places belonging thereunto, ſaid I, Methinks it is no difficult matter to ſteal one of theſe *Hogsheads*, had I but aſſiſtance. You ſhall not want mine Sir (ſaid he) even to to the hazard of my life, which I ſhall never look on as a ſufficient requital for this ſingular favour you have now confer'd on me. *Having* walkt there a while we went down to a place call'd *Lazy-hill*, where I found out two or three pure Rogues more, one whereof had a *Boat*. I informed them of my deſign, they willingly promis'd their helping hand, and the time appointed for the effecting our intentions, was that night about twelve. Accordingly we all met, and having ptocured an empty *Hogshead*, we fill'd it vvith vvater and away vve vventin the *Boat*. The tide ebbing had left dry ground underneath the Key, vvhere I planted three of our company, inſtructing them that aſſoon as they found the Coaſt clear above, they ſhould vvith ſlings (vvhich they had for that purpoſe) leave the *Hogshead* of water, & exchange it for one of wine; vvhich done they ſhould march off immediately.

I and my new Comerade marcht up the Custom-house stairs, where we encountred with two old Watchmen. They askt us what our business was; we told them we had no other design but to drink with them, having been a little frolicksome the other side the water. The old Watchmen were very joyful at this news, and so giving one of them money to fetch some drink, the other carried me to the Lodg. The drink being come, they minded that so much, they had forgotten their duty, and I ply'd them so close with whole ones, that they were incapable of holding one more: in the mean time my Comrogues were gone, pretending our boat was a drift, we took our leaves, for then we could go along by the shore side, leaving this paper on one of the Hogsheads, I left them.

What Moses *did in the Creators name,*
By art Egyptian *Magick did the same.*
Since I have read of Water turn'd to Wine,
This Miracle is opposite to mine.
For I (*though never yet a Rhenish hater*)
Have by my art converted Wine to Water.

I have often heard these very lines (with some real circumstances of this our exploit, but more fictitious) repeated to me as a very good jest, which pleas'd me near upon as much as our purchase, Being five of us concern'd, we scorn'd to sell our Wine, but contracting with some to find Sugar, with others *Westphalia hams*, or such like relishing meats, and with others to be at the expence of *Musick*, but every one to be at his own charge for Wenches; we never gave over ranting and roaring till we had drein'd the Hogshead dry.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXV.

His Landlady dieth, and so is left again to live by his wits; his Comerade is hang'd, with some hints of his desperate, irreligious, and atheistical tenents.

IN the height of our jollity, word was brought me that my Landlady was dangerously sick, and that she desir'd to speak with me instantly; thinking it was only a fit of her lecherous and fallacious itch, I made no great haste, but at length I went: Assoon as I entred within her doors, I received the sad tidings of her death. I ran up stairs (not believing this report, because I would not have it so) but found it too true, Viewing her as she lay I perceiv'd her hand fast clincht: I took it into mine, and wrenching it open, there dropt ten pieces of Gold, which I conceive she intended to have bestow'd on me whilest living, as her last Legacy. I conveyed them privately into my Pocket, and presently made enquiry how she had dispos'd of her Estate; but I receiv'd little or no satisfaction herein, onely to my great vexation, I heard she often to the very last call'd much upon me.

I stay'd not above two or three days in the house, but I was forced to leave it.

I met with my obliged friend, to whom I communicated my late misfortune: he like an experienc'd Stoick counsel'd me to bear my loss patiently,

ly,

ly, since that it is below a man to repine at any sublunary casualty, much more to sink under the burden of any vexatious cross, or remediless loss. We discours'd what expedient we were best to take, and to encrease our small stocks by some witty exploit. We propounded many things which we approved not of. We thought of turning Highway men, but I diss waded him from that, by informing him that money is very scarce, and that men of 500 *l. per annum* usually traveled 30 or 40 miles with a single *Cob*, or piece of eight, not so much for fear of robbing as for want of Coyn, and that is the reason that all sorts of provision are very cheap, because there is so great a scarcity of that should purchace them. Why then said he, there is money enough in the Exchequer. But said I, it is so difficult to come at that I will not hazard my life in the attempt. Hearing me speak in this manner, he look't upon me in derision; saying, *That fear was a passion unworthy to be lodg'd in the Soul of man, and that there is nothing here which a man either should or need to fear*, Secundum Religionem Stoici: *And that man deserv'd not the fruition of the least happiness here, that would not, rather then go without it, venture his neck.*

We had so hot a contest about this, that we parted in anger, and never saw him afterwards till I heard of his condemnation, which was occasioned by the prosecution of what he propounded to me. Two or three more besides himself combin'd to rob the Exchequer, but were apprehended in the enterprize, committed, arraigned at the *Bar*, convicted and condemned. Hearing hereof *I* gave him a visit in *Prison*; expressing much sorrow for

what

what he was to suffer; but he onely laught at me for my pains. I desir'd him to be more serious, since three days would put a period to his life, and then he must give an account to his Creator of what he had done on earth, and that though we might sooth up our selves in all manner of debauchery here, yet without cordial repentance we must suffer for it hereafter. Prythee, said he, do not trouble thy head with such idle fancies. That there is a God I cannot, nor will not deny, since there are Regiments of Arguments levied both from the stately fabrick of the arched *Heaven*, and from the inimitable embroidery of the flowry earth which are sufficient to conquer that infidelity, and render men tributaries to the all-forming Essence. But that this God should be so unjust (who is al goodness) as to make the intent of my Creation damnation, it shall never come within the verge of my belief: if there be any punishment for criminal commissions, it must be annihilation, or nothing. Quote not me the Scriptures for my conviction if I err, since they are full of contradictions, and contain many things incredible. Neither do I know (since we are forbidden murder) why *Abraham* should kill his Son *Isaac*, and the same person commit Adultery with his maid *Hagar*, (which is largely describ'd) yet we are commanded the contrary; if we borrow or steal, we are enjoyn'd to make restitution; notwithstanding, the *Israelites* were permitted to borrow the *Egyptians* Ear-rings without giving satisfaction. In this manner I could cavil *ad infinitum*; and yet this Book is the Basis of Christianity. Let me tell you plainly, Religion at first was only the quaint *Leger-de-*

main of some strong pated Statesmen, who to over awe the Capriciousness of a giddy multitude, did forge the opinion of a punisher of all humane evil actions. What was *Mahomet* but an Impostor, whose palpable cheats grew up in his successors into a Religion, and whose inventions were and are receiv'd with as much adoration by the wisest of men, as is the Orthodox Veneration (as they term it) to a Deity, which is the object of Christian worship. The Popes piety is onely pride and ambition, and ye he pronounces Damnation against all such as are not of his belief, &c. If you will know the diversity of Religions, (all oppugning on the other) take a view thereof in Mr. *Ross* his *Panspheia*. Now seeing the rational soul hath fail'd so oft' and so absurdly in its discoveries, how or why should we submit our selves slavishly to its determinations. For that which doth at some times err, can never at any time be concluded infallible.—

He would have proceeded, But I desir'd him to desist, which request of mine made him bid me be gone and not to trouble him, which I willingly did not, imagining him to have such good parts and withall not having so much understanding in Christianity as to confute him by argument, but I hoped his own Conscience would perform that office when he came to the place of Execution.

The day being come, I resolved to see the final end of my friend. And there did I enjoy the fruits of my hopes and wishes. For as soon as the Halter was about his neck, he roar'd so loud with his voice, that it could not but awake the most lethargick conscience that ever the Devil lull'd asleep. There I might see and know by the urinal of his eyes,

eyes, and the water standing therein. What convulsion fits his soul suffer'd, his own mouth confessing how grievously his diseased soul was stretched upon the rack of despair: then it was that the voluminous Registers of his conscience, which did formerly lye clapsed in some unsearcht corner of his memory, were laid open before him, and the Devil, who hitherto gave him the lessning end of the prospect to survey his licentious courses & damned opinion, now turn'd the magnifying end to his eye, which made him cry out at last; for the merits of thy Son Jesus Christ whom I have despis'd with thy Holy Scriptures, have mercy on my soul; and so was turn'd off.

CHAP. XXVI.

He passeth for a Batchelour, Courts several under the pretence of Marrying them, by which he perswades some out of their Maiden-heads; others out of their Money, with which he goes for England; *At* Chester *he cheats his Landlord, where having all things requisite to compleat an Highway-man, following that trade, he is met with by some of that gang, who intending to rob him he discovers his intentions, and they admit of him into their society.*

BEing left now to shift for my self, having lost the main prop that sustain'd me in all condions, I addrest my self to Courtship. Beauty was

not the mark I aimed, the purchase thereof producing little profit, since it self is most commonly the sole reward; neither can a man attain to it but by great expence outvying all therein, least any interpose. Either wealthy and aged widdows, or thrifty Maids, who had laid up what they had gotten in Service as a bait to procure an Husband, such did I daily hunt out and visit them by turns. I was not sparing of amorous expressions, showing therein the height of zeal. By which means I deluded several. Some I was forced to give earnest to for their Commodities, before they would trust me with what they had. This course I followed till I was generally taken notice of for a grand deceiver. Having now gotten a round sum of money by me, I borrowed wheresoever I could, so crossing S. *Georges* Channel and landed at *Chester*. I took up my quarters in a very graceful Inn, and gave out immediately that I had an hundred head of Cattel coming. The Master of the house taking notice of my extraordinary Garb, and believing the report which I had caused to be spread abroad, lodged me with much respect in one of the best Chambers of his house.

The Wind favoured my design as much as I could desire, for it blew East-North-East, by which no Shipping could come out of *Ireland*. One day I came to my Landlord, and telling him that by reason of the non arrival of my Cattel, I was disappointed of Moneys, and therefore I desired him to lend me ten Pounds, and he should satisfie himself in the first choice of the best of my beasts when they came, and swore to him I would perform my promise to him upon the word of a Gentleman. So

that

that without any scruple he lent me the money. Being Market-day I bought an excellent Gelding with Furniture thereunto belonging, with Sword and Pistols, and in this Equipage mounted, I took my leave of my credulous Landlord; without speaking a word to him. I had not rid far before three well mounted rid by me, (I found them afterwards to be the Van-guard) having as many more in the Rear. At the bottom of the Hill they before faced about, and bidding me stand, those in the Rear reinforced the Van. One of them clapping a Pistol at my breast, commanded me forthwith to deliver, Swearing three or four full mouth'd Oaths. I told them I was or would be one of their society. They examined my Pockets, and finding store of Coyn, they demanded how I came by it: I invented a lye to their general satisfaction, which was, I had met with a Booty a little before I met with them, which was the occasion of my being so well furnisht; but that which confirm'd them most was my being so well provided with Pistols in my Holsters, Pockets, and Boots. Instead of doing what they intended, they were then of another opinion, and all of them careſt me in a very high manner, resolving to be merry at the next Inn, and there to admit me as a Brother.

Having set up their Horses, they went into a Room before, I staying some time after for the benefit of easing nature: coming in among them I thought my self mistaken in my company, so made a proffer to go out again: but they laughing heartily called me back. My amazement was encreased, for they had pull'd off their false Beards, Vizards, Hoods, Patches, Wens, Moſſers and Periwigs,

together with these other disguises that obscured the natural proportion of their faces, so that they appear'd as other men. Come said the chief (as I guest him to be by the sway he bore over the rest) you are a freshman, and therefore want some of our instructions, which in due time you shall receive from us. In the first place it is fit that you take an Oath, which every young Thief must observe that is admitted into the Brotherhood, or at his investation into the honour of one of the Knights of the Road: which was to this effect, First, they read a charge of secrecy, that what ever misfortune happened to clowd their freedom by rendring them as an object to Justice and the Law; they shall conceal their Complices to the death, or against any other jeopardy whatsoever, burying in oblivion not onely his Confederates, but also his manner of entrance into this way.

And further, they proceeded to swear me, that if the Judges should press me to a discovery of particulars, that then I must cunningly create some person in my fancy, devising not onely Names, but to each mans particular feature, describing their stature, complexion and age, as also their dwelling place. Still provided that the place of their abode be far enough off. And then before enquiry be made, the danger of the trial may be over or past; and then again this pretended discovery may purchase favour from the Bench.

Further, if I should be examined, why, and how I fell into these courses, I must then tell them that I was born a Gentleman, and well educated, but being a younger brother, I had not where withal allowed me for a subsistance, and rather then I would

would live beneath my birth, or disparage the stock from whence I came (here fetching a deep sigh, and looking very sadly) necessity constraining me to supply my wants, I fell into these wicked courses; which will make them think you are some misled young man whom temptations had drawn aside, and so cause them to take pity of your condition; and if their mercy extend to the remission of your guilt, it shall not onely wrest you from the punishment of the Law, but from the persecution of your past evils.

By this means we may have liberty to fall to our old courses; nor must conscience trouble us but dispence with every impiety, and glory in the greatest iniquities, counting him most honourable who is grown the oldest and most exquisite, experienced practitioner of all manner of vice. Much more was committed to my memory for future observation, which for brevity sake I shall omit.

CHAP. XXVII.

Some Instructions given me by our Grand-master Thief.

Composing his Countenance, and looking very gravely, Come my new and young Knight of the Road, be ruled by me whose long experience makes me able to command, and my love to you willing to instruct you. Ever lurk or lie in some by-place most advantagious and least suspitious which yields the eye the prospect of the Road so,

ſtrictly view the Booties, that other mens misfortunes may enrich your condition, and the honeſt mans loſs be your gain; and be ſure you draw every advantage that may promote your cauſe to the longeſt extent. For your Masks and Chin-cloth, thus muſt you place them and fit them at a moment to diſguiſe your faces, thereby to blind the intellects of ſuch as by conſtraint pay tribute to your wants, who then can know and with conſiderate heed directly ſwear you are the man, when theſe artificial Vizards are withdrawn, and ſo the viſible tokens vaniſh that might inform mens knowledge, what you are, and that your words may have a different ſound after your voice, that ſo as your habit, face, and hair obſcure your diſcovery; your ſpeech (reputed undiſguiſeable) will add to your concealment and ſecurity.

Be ſure you ingeniouſly contrive a Watch-word to your ſelves that may occaſion no ſuſpition; as we are like to have a fair day or a foul, according as the weather is like to prove, which being nam'd let every man fall to his work, thoſe that are ſtrongeſt at the graſp, and have hearts accordingly, let them ſeize firſt, alwayes duly obſerving this, to catch the bridle by the left hand, and with the right draw your Sword. If he or they reſiſt, the one prevents his flight, the other cuts, and ſo cools his courage. The weaker ſorts charge is to bid ſtand, and confronting the Horſe's head, preſent a Piſtol fit for to diſcharge. If they deny delivering patiently what they have, but contend, you muſt wave all niceties, but cut them ſoundly; if that will not qualifie their fooliſh preſumption, be ſure you fire not without doing Execu-

on, and then with what speed fly, after you have with expedition taken the pillage of the field.

If you are pursu'd by an Hue and Cry, obscure your self in some place or other, and let it pass by you, and then to be sure it will never overtake you. If a Prize comes by, or in your sight, if up the Hill meet him, if down follow close at the heels, and having more in company then your self, let each man single out his choice which he likes to deal with, the coast being clear fall up all to your close order and side, be sure that you jointly seize your prize. But here observe let not any baseness of spirit unman you. For (*speaking to me*) nature hath bestow'd on you the full proportion of limbs, and seem'st a man of courage, suitable to the largeness of thy manly size, but be not surpriz'd with fear or cowardise if the assailed boldly assaults thee.

Full fraught with the Documents which I receiv'd from my old experienc'd Master, I resolv'd upon some atchievement; between two and three in the afternoon I my self with four more set out; we planted our selves in a convenient place, only I was sent out for a discoverer, not rightly understanding my trade I wandred too far, but in my digression I met with a single person whom I bid stand, which he would have done, and as willingly have surrendred his purse, but that he was mounted on a stone-horse, I on a Mare. Assoon as I had given the word his stone-horse wheel'd off and came in the rear of me, I thinking he intended to crupper me, endeavoured all wayes imaginable to prevent him, for there was something it seems under my Mares tail more powerful, which at that

time

time I dreamt not of, I led him round and round several times circularly, the poor harmless Gentleman fearing he should provoke me too much by delays, the unrulineſs of his Horſe hindring my ſeiſing the Booty, cry'd out worthy Sir, take what I have and ſpare my life, at that very inſtant his Horſe rear'd his two fore feet upon me and my Mare, in ſo much that I thought he ſaid, I'le take both Life and Money too preſently; fear had then rendred me ſo incapable of performing the office of a Thief. With that I put ſpurs to my Mare, and flew through the air for the procuration of my ſafety. Notwithſtanding I made what ſpeed I could the other was cloſe at my heels, ſtriving and kicking with both my legs, one of my Piſtols went off in my Pocket, the apprehenſion of the preſent danger had bereft me of the true uſe of my ſenſe; for I imagined that my back friend had diſcharg'd at me, which made me roar out for quarter. He on the contrary concluded I fought *Tartar* like flying, and that I had fir'd it at him, which made him with much eagerneſs eccho out with repitition this expreſſion, *As you are a man, ſhew your ſelf merciful.* Sometimes he would ſay, for Jeſus ſake hold, good Sir ſtop, which made me ride more furiouſly, thinking he call'd to the Country, hold him, ſtop him; at laſt do what I could, his Stone-horſe leapt up upon us, at that inſtant (by what means I know not) we all came headlong to the ground. I expected now that my imaginary adverſary would be upon me, and cut my throat before I could recover my legs, wherefore I ſtarted up and found my mortal foe up before me and upon the run. I could have hang'd my ſelf to think I ſhould be

reckoned

reckoned among the number of men, and yet want that ſpirit and courage which compleats a man; but loſing no time I purſu'd him, and eaſily made my ſelf poſſeſſor of what he had; Sirrha ſaid I, if e're I meet thee again, and find thee ſo obſtinate, or durſt reſiſt, as now thou haſt done I will tye thee to a Tree in ſome obſcure place, where none can hear thy doleful cryes, and there for ſix days thou ſhall have no other food but what I ſhall bring thee. Once a day during that term I will viſit thee, and each days Meat ſhall be either a piece of thine own Sword broken into ſmall bits, or thoſe Bullets (which thou intendeſt for the deſtruction of honeſt men) diſſolv'd and mingled with Gunpowder, which ſhall be convey'd to thy mouth through the muzzle of thy own Piſtol. It pleaſed me exceedingly to ſee how pitiful and ſubmiſſively he lookt, for verily I durſt not have utter'd half ſo much if he had ſhown an auſtere countenance.

As I was framing a lye to delude my Comerades (when I ſhould meet them) into a belief how valiant I was, and dexterous in proſecution of that deſign I had newly undertaken, I lookt about me and ſaw them all at my elbow. I now believ'd (which I eaſily perceiv'd by their fleering looks) that they were all eye-witneſſes of my dangerous encounter. Oh brother, ſaid one, how i't, are you well? I aſkt him the reaſon of his impertinent queſtion? Becauſe, ſaid he, we took notice of the great danger you were in even now, narrowly eſcaped of being ſhot by a Pocket Inkhorn. Without doubt, brother, you are very hard hearted to fly (riding full ſpeed) at the very naming of, *Good Sir be merciful*, The poor harmleſs ſoul making

frequent

frequent repetition thereof, but you stopping your ears for all intreaties, his Stone-horse seem'd to be his Advocate, and to that intent ran after your Mare, endeavouring to court her into an intercession for his Master.

I should never have stopt their mouths had I not shew'd them what I had gotten, which was not inconsiderable.

It was twy-light as we met with another Prize, which was of a different temper from the former. For though he and his fellow traveller were (comparatively to any of us) but Pigmies, yet of so undaunted resolution and unresistable courage, that neither threats of death, or torture (I am confident) could dull the edges of their couragious spirits, which might be in part understood by their deportment to us, for had we not slasht, carbonadoed, and forceably bound them, rather then they would have yielded willingly, they would have stoopt to death. Our power having subdued them, we withdrew them into a secret place, leaving them not any thing valuable. Then did I learn to search with so strickt care, that sooner might the Grand *Turk* turn *Roman* Catholick then conceal a penny from me; here was I taught to be deaf when the poor Traveller cries he is undone; and to be more flinty than Adamant, not to be mov'd with sighs or tears. Having ingag'd them by Oath not to follow us by Hue and Cry, or by means of a general rising of the Towns adjacent; these two fellows robbed, rifled and amazed, we left wrapt up in woes, and hasted away to secure our selves.

I shall conclude this Chapter with a Relation

how

how I was quit with my Comrades upon the account of fear or timorousness. Neither could they justly tax me with it, since they are things entail'd upon the profession. For every Crow that flies extracts a fear, and every thing that doth but stir, or make the bushes rush, seem'd to our fearful fancy a Constable to apprehend us for our theft. I cannot forget how strong a confusion arose among us by a trifle, the meanes were so small, and the occasion so ridiculous, that when ever after I thought thereon (though by my self) I could not forbear laughing and condemn the timerity of such minds so meanly spirited. 'Twas thus in short, An Owle who to gain shelter from the troubles of a Sun-shine day, when all the airy tribe (wandering) flock to him, screen'd himself in the obscure retird residence of an hollow tree; no sooner had he cloister'd up himself, but between discontent and something of a pleasing satisfaction, he first utter'd his amazing screeks, being in a slumber, and dreaming of the assaults were made at him by his feathr'd enemies, of all sorts, and then again awaking, whoopt for joy that he was delivered from them; thus did he whoop and hollow incessantly, which infus'd such a terrour into our distrustfull minds, that Whips, Switches, and Spurs were all too few to expedite our haste. For we absolutely thought those *Hollows* were the out-cryes of the Country following us for what we had committed. We at length took Sanctuary in an Inn, where we had some interest and confidence in our security.

Understanding that our dayes work had been prosperous, our *Host* calls lustily for Sack, which the drawer doubles in the Bar, the *Hostler* must be

one

one of our company too, and hail fellow with us, who knowing what courses we take, presume we dare not cavil, lest they betray our practices. *Sic nos non nobis.* So we rob for them, and not for our selves; for by that time we have profusely frolicked (a bill whereof shall be brought in of twice as much as was called for) and have bestowed our largesses to the Servants, and offer'd up our (expected) sacrifices to our Landlady, or her Daughter for some private favour received, we find our selves to have the least share, and so betake our selves to our trade till apprehension take from us that liberty, and the Law sentenceth us to pay our lives as a just debt we owe to Justice.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Scouring the Road, he lights on a Farmers house which he intended to rob, but desists from that resolution, falling in Love with his Daughter, who was exceeding beautiful; gets her with Child, under the pretence of Marriage, but afterwards refusing it, She and her Parents tax him with the undoing of the young Woman; whereupon he leaveth them, giving them no other satisfaction then what they could gather out of a Copy of Verses he sent them.

Riding along the Road I met with a young Girl with a Milk-Pail on her head, but I was amaz'd to see such perfection in one mortal face; I rid

rid up to her very near, purposely to entertain some discourse with her, I propounded some questions to this pretty Country Girle; as, which was the readiest way to such a place? &c. which with much respect and modest confidence she resolv'd; she opening a gate to milk her Cows, I followed, and tying my Horse to an hedg, I beg'd her an excuse for being so rude and beseecht her charitable opinion of my present actions, assuring her I would not offer the least injury nor prejudice to her chastity. Being over-perswaded with my protestations and vows to that purpose, she admitted me to sit down and discourse with her whilest she performed the office of a Milk-maid. I I could hardly contain my self within the bounds of continence, when I viewed her pretty little hand *stroking* the *Duggs*, which indeed had so heightned my amorous passion, that I soon forgot my Oaths and Promises, but after some dalliance, what by intreaties and love perswasions, and what by corporeal strength I obtained the fruition of my desires. We then grew somewhat more familiar, but the burden of the Song was, *I had undone her*: let him that reads judg the truth thereof. We concluded at length that she should go home to her Fathers house, and that near night I would come thither likewise, according to the time appointed, as if *I* had never seen her before.

She subtilly goes in and acquaints her Father and mother that there was a Gentleman (without) whom by his countenance, garb and jesture, shew'd himself no less; that ceasing to travel farther, being night, knowing not the way, desir'd to rest himself there till morning. With much respects from her

Parents

Parents to her own great satisfaction (which I discern'd in her eyes) I was kindly entertain'd, and nobly treated. That night we intended to be better acquainted by the renovation of our late enjoyments; but our unlucky Starrs were impropitious to our amorous designes. Next morning I seem'd to be very ill, that I might have some pretence for my staying, which I acquainted the Daughter withal, the old people were very loving and courteous, so that assoon as they heard thereof, With much pitty they visited me, and with as much care they provided what was necessary for me. I offer'd them money, shewing good store of Gold that they might have the better esteem of me. Thus I lay for at least a fortnight; several Doctors had been with me, but none knew my distemper. All this while I nightly had the society of my fresh Country Mistress, who after the first *bout* deviated from the common customes of her Sex, did not coyishly refuse that which was the *center* of her hopes, wishes and desires. Fearing least I might be suspected I left off counterfeiting, and shew'd them some recovery of my strength. When at any time the good old people would come into my Chamber to sit with me, the main subject of my discourse would be my resentment of their favours, and that if I liv'd I would gratefully repay them. Being restor'd to my former healthful condition, I one day told them I could never recompence their love and care of me but by marrying their Daughter, whom I told them I lov'd most affectionately. Her Parents made many excuses, as that she was but a poor Country Girle and the like, but glad I perceiv'd they were to hear such an overpriz'd moti-

on

on. Nothing gave me greater contentment then to be
in company together, by which we had as many opportuni-
ties as we lifted. My main aim was to know
of my young Mistress the store of Gold her Fa-
ther had, and where it lay, but to my great grief
and vexation she told me he had not five pound
within doors, having lately bought a purchase. I
now thought it was to little purpose to stay lon-
ger, having reapt the crop of her Mothers labour,
and so resolv'd to be going, but not without one
nights solemn leave-taking of her, resolving
to have a *Billibuh* with her in her own Milk-pail.
The night being come, she purposely stay'd up till
all the rest were gone to bed. But we being too
imprudently hasty in the Kitching, we set a Chair
against two Barrels pil'd one on the other,
which we thought to be a prop sufficient; but
in the action fell with the Chair, and we both
were so intangled, that we could not disengage
our selves so soon, but that her Father came out
crying, *In the name of God what is the matter?*
And groping about caught me by the naked
breech. Seeing there was no remedy, I desir'd him
to be silent, and not spread his Daughters disgrace,
if so, I would make her shortly a reasonable.
The old man was very much perplext, and could
not forbear telling his wife of what had past. They
both knew out that their Daughter was undone;
which simply to a [illegible] their own
eyes had seen [illegible] was in the same
condition, unless [illegible]

I stay'd after [illegible] three days to
colour the [illegible]

cognito, sending her twenty pieces of Gold, and these slines; which, although I knew they understood not, yet I could not but express my self by writing, if for nothing else but mine own satisfaction.

Is it not strange thou and thy friends should say,
Thou art undone by me? Let's see which way.
Have I not done to my great toyl and pain,
What all thy friends cannot undo *again.*
Call but to mind the pleasures thou hast tasted,
The hours and minutes which with thee I wasted.
To bring thee to perfection; and to teach
Thee learning, far above the Sexes reach.
Have I not taught thee oft Astronomy,
When on thy back with me all night did'st lie
Within thy Mothers Garden, shew'd thee all
The Starry course, and Spheurs Celestial.
For every Sign *in Heaven, did I not make*
Another in thy Bellies Zodiak?
Than night I made a Via lactea
unto Loves Court *another* Milky way,
Out-spreading that ran from the full swoln Dugg
Of Juno, *which young* Hercules *did tug.*
Did I not teach thee Poetry that night
And how in Trippid Dactyls *thou shouldst write?*
Did I not teach thee next Arithmetick,
Both what a Cypher *stands for, what a prick?*
How thou should'st add, *subtract, and then divide;*
How to encrease, *and* Multiply *beside.*
Instead of Counters, *how thou should'st use kisses;*
And with a Pin tell all a woman's blisses.
I taught thee then Geometry, *(dear)*

Of

Of length and breadth, egality, proportion
of Quadrant Triangles; the way to enter
Circles, or Semi-circles; how the Center
Stands ever fixt, how that every line
Direct, or oblique, circular, or trine
Hath still its ending; how to take the height
Of any blazing bearded Star by night.
I taught thee Musicks harmony to know,
To keep true time, where thou should'st rest, and how:
Learn'd thee likewise thy notes, large, long, or brief,
Prickt Minom, with a Crotchet, and the chief
Of the lov'd Art, good discant for to make
Upon a plain Song. Discords also take
With a sweet close, and melodyly to fall
Into a Treble, ravishing withal.
To hold thy prick-notes out full to the length,
Raising thy self, in pausing not in strength.
I shew'd thee why Artists hold six Cliffs best,
And why 'tis prized far above the rest.
Because it keeps the middst; the very heart
And Soul of Musick is the inner part.
Yet art undone thou saidst? Is to impart
The hidden secrets of mysterious art
Undoing to thee. Hadst them ever spent
Thy means upon me, or thy money lent,
And had not paid the Interest back to thee,
Thou and thy friends might then have rail'd at me.
That precious nothing, at so dear a rate,
That high priz'd jewel (none can estimate)
Thy Maiden-head I do confess I had,
For which thy friends not onely made me glad,
But you and they are bound to bless that hour,
And happy time, I crept thy Virgin flower.

What wert thou before I knew thee, but an Ass,
A rude neglected home-spun Country *lass,*
Knowing not how to speak, to go or look,
But hide thy self when seen in every nook,
And blush, nay tremble if thou wert found out;
Strive to be gone again, scratch, cry, and pout
If one but touch thy Apron, and wouldst spit
In's mouth should come to kiss thee: for thy wit
It did extend but unto no, and I,
Confess this truth, or else in faith you lye.
This was thy eloquence; why did I love thee?
Young plump & fair thou wert, & that did move me
I took thee and refin'd thee, made thee new,
Alter'd thy nature, chang'd thy former hew:
Taught thee to kiss, embrace, and entertain
A lover with that Sp'rit and catching vein,
The Goddess of delight in her own sports
May strive to equal thee, but must come short.
Such an attractive action in the touch
Thou hast; so full of various motion, such
Pleasurable changes, now warm as fire,
Now cold again, then ready to expire
In a sweet passion, 'twixt life and death,
Now motionless, then with short panting *breath*
Striv'st to revive, just as when life is ending
By violence, e'ne in the very spending
Of the last spirits, the hand will grasp,
And catch at every thing; so didst thou clasp
Me in thy armes, when in our amorous play,
Like to mans life I'de liks to drop away.
Where hadst thou all thy breeding *but from me?*
Who bound *thee first, and now have made thee free.*
Thy petulant discourse, and wpish toying,

A change of humours, now a sullen coying,
All which I taught thee, which do make thee rare,
Now are thy Attributes as well as fair:
And these will render thee belov'd unto
Experienc'd men, for very well they know
Woman was made for recreation,
For mans delight and procreation.
And what content is in a simpering fool,
A squeamish thing, she doth mans spirits cool;
Beats back the flowing current of his blood,
And ebbs it in the very spring or floud.
Men loves not like a beast the act of kind,
For by so acting he but dulls the mind,
Dejects the countenance, and deads the eye,
Murders his mirth, intrudes Melancholly,
And sad repentance on the troubled heart,
Throwing and heavy slumber on each part.
It is the act of acting that doth take
The sense of Man, and compleat pleasure make.
'Tis harsh to hear a School boy in one tone
Repeat his lesson like a Bagpipes drone.
But it doth ravish with delight the ear,
Well worded and sweet language'd lines to hear,
Pronoune'd by one hath skill and art to know
When he should raise his voyce, when bring it low.
For though a Poet write good Lines, it is
The speaker that doth make them hit or miss.
So though a Wench be nere so fair, so neat,
Or well proportion'd, if she want the feat
Of acting will upon loves Theater,
It will not make mans loving passion stir.
She's like one handsome in a splendid suit,
Onely to fit a Stage and play the Mute

And shall not go clapt off with frequent kisses,
The Lovers plaudit, *but dist astful* hisses.
And such wert thou, when first I met with thee,
An innocent dull thing: Now if thou lie
With cold December *thou wilt make him sweat*
Out all his Icy-marrow *with thy heat.*
It is delight enough to touch thy hand,
Or feel thy active pulse beat, or but stand
In opposition to thy sparkling eye,
Or tast thy lips, or keep thee company.
To see thee dance, or hear thee speak, or sing,
But who attains unto the other thing,
I cannot name with patience. Let him rest,
For with the Crown of pleasures he is blest.
Now have I brought thee to thy excellence
With my excessive toy', *and dear* expence
Of my best blood; *and added to thee more*
Then was in all thy Ancestors *before*
Gentility. *I have enricht thy mind*
With the chief Ornament of Woman kind
Behaviour: *Taught thee to live and spend*
Of thy own gettings, *without help of friend.*
And have I this ungrateful Girle *for all*
That I have done *to thee. Why dost thou call*
Me thy Undoer *since that I have been*
Thy second Maker, *and have* stood *between*
Thee and thy wants. However I will forgive,
For I am in charity, and do believe
The onely cause why I am vext so sore
With thy undoing, *'cause I do no more,*
I do no more, because thou mayst grow common
To more then me, and I will share with no man.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

From this Farmers house he rides he cared not whither. On the Road he is strangely surpriz'd by a Woman Robber in Mans apparel; He discovers it by unbuttoning her Breeches to search for private Pockets within. They two conclude a perpetual Friendship.

ABruptly taking my leave of the Farmer and his loving daughter, I rid a long time but met with none worthy of my taking Cognizance; being wearied I struck into an Inn, and by that time I had throughly refresht my self, the evening began to approach. Whereupon I mounted and so put on; Passing by a smal Coppice in a bottom between two Hills, a Gentleman (as I then suppos'd) well arm'd, and handsomely accoutred, started out upon me, and bid me deliver instantly. Hearing him say so, I told him if he would have but the patience I would; and with that drew out a Pocket Pistol and fir'd it at him, without doing any execution. If you are for a little sport said

(said the Gentleman) I shall show you some instantly; whereupon drawing a Pistol he shot me into the leg; having so done, with his Sword (which hung ready at his wrist) neatly at a blow he cut the reins of my Bridle, so that I was not able to guide my Horse. But he being at good command and us'd to the charge, with the winding of my body, I gave him to understand what he was to do. Come Sir, said my adversary, have you enough yet? In faith Sir, said I, I'le exchange but one Pistol more, and if that prove insuccessful I shall submit to your mercy; Whereupon I shot but miss'd my mark, however I kill'd his Horse, which instantly fell, my Gentleman was so nimble that before I could think what to do, he had sheathed his sword in my Horses belly, which made me come tumbling down too with a *Horse-pox*. Once more said my Antagonist, we are upon equal terms, and since the obscuritie of the place gives us freedom, let us try our courages, one must fall. And thereupon with his Sword (which was for cut and thrust) he made a full pass at my body, but putting it by I clos'd in with him, and upon the Hug threw him with much facilitie, I wonder'd much at this, which I need not have done since his nature (as afterwards I understood) was so prone to it. Having him down, now, Sir, said I, I shall teach you to be careful on whom you set, you have as imprudently undertaken this enterprize as a *Pickeroon* did once, who seeing a Man of War high built, and but few men aboard her discoverable, her Port-holes being likewise fast, clapt her aboard immediately, thinking

she

she had been a Merchantman, but they found the contrarie, the deck being instantlie filled with men that were below, and ruuning out her Guns there could be no wisdom of resistance. Wherefore now Sir yield, or I shall compel you; with much reluctancy he did. With cords I had ready for that purpose, I ty'd both his hands and feet, and so fell to rifling him. Unbuttoning his Doublet to find whether there was no Gold quilted therein, I wonder'd to see a pair of Breasts so unexpectedly greater and whiter then any Mans; but being intent about my business that amazement vanisht from my thoughts. Then did I come to his breeches (which I said open) my curious search omitted not anie place wherein I might suspect the concealment of moneys, at last proffering to remove his shirt from between his legs, he suddenlie cry'd out (and strove to lay his hand there, but could not) I beseech you Sir be civil, said he; I imagining that some notable *Treasure* lay there obscur'd, I pull'd up his shirt (*alias* Smock) and found my self not much mistaken.

The sight so surpriz'd me as if I had been converted into a Statue by the Head of a *Gorgon*. For the present it lay neither in her power nor mine, to pull down her Smock again: but after a little pause, I hastily unbound her, and taking her in my Armes, Pardon me most courageous *Amazon*, (said I) for thus rudely dealing with you, it was nothing but ignorance that caus'd this error; for could my dim-sighted soul have distinguisht what you were; the greatness of love and respect I bear your Sex would

would have deter'd me from contending with you. But I esteem this my ignorance my greatest happiness, since knowledg in this case would have depriv'd me of the benefit of knowing there could be so much Prowess in a Woman. For your sake I shall ever retain (since you have restored it) a good esteem of the worst of Females. She beg'd me not to be too tedious in my expressions, nor pump for eloquent phrases alledging this was no proper place to make Oratious in. But if you will enlarge your self, let us go to the next Inn. I lik'd her advice very well, and returning what I had taken from her, I followed it, by following her through divers obscure passages till we came to a Wood, wherein a place the Sun had not seen since the first deluge, stood an House. At our approach the Servants were all in a hurry who should first take Mrs. *Virago's* Horse, for they all knew her being no way estranged to her disguize, with much respect me were conducted into a very stately room, where embracing each other, we knit an indissolvable tye of friendship.

CHAP.

CHAP: XXX.

After Supper they enter in Discourse, wherein she giveth him a short account of her Life; relating how notably she revenged her self on her Husband for his unworthy and base carriage towards her.

SHe now laid her self open to me, not concealing any thing from me, having before made my self acquainted with her greatest Secret. Frankly she call'd for Bottles of Wine, which we smartly drank together, out of Beer-glasses, had not Supper been speedily provided, which required a cessation for some time, I should not have been in a condition to discern the Dish, nor him that brought it to the Table. Having taken some repast I began to be refresht, she not in the least disturb'd all this while.

I prest her to tell me what she was, and what manner of life she led. Sir, said she, I cannot deny your request, wherefore to satisfie you, Know that I was the Daughter of a Sword-Cutler. In my younger dayes my Mother would have taught me to handle a Needle; but my Martial spirit gain-said all perswasions to that purpose. I could

could never endure to be among the Utenſils of the Kitchin, but ſpent moſt of my time in my Father's Shop, taking wonderful delight in handling thoſe Warlike inſtruments, to take a Sword in my hand well mounted and brandiſh it, was reckoned by me among the chief of my recreations. Being about a douzen years of age I ſtudy'd all waies imaginable how I might make my ſelf acquainted with a Fencing-Maſter. Time brought my deſires to their accompliſhment, for ſuch a one as I wiſht for, caſually came into our Shop to have his Blade furbiſht, and Fortune ſo order'd it there was none to anſwer him but my ſelf. Having given him that ſatisfaction he deſired, though not expecting it from me: Amongſt other talk I demanded of him whither he was not a Profeſſor of the noble Science? (for I gueſt ſo much by his Poſtures, Looks, and expreſsions.) He told me he was a well willer thereunto; being glad of this opportunity, deſiring him to conceal my intentions, I requeſted him the favour as to give me ſome inſtructions how I ſhould mannage a Sword: at firſt he ſeem'd amaz'd at my Propoſal, but perceiving I was in earneſt, he granted my petition, allotting me ſuch a time to come to him as was moſt convenient. I became ſo expert at *Back*-ſword and Single-Rapier in a ſhort time, that I needed not his aſsiſtance any longer: My Parents not in the leaſt miſtruſting anie ſuch thing.

I ſhall wave what Exploits I did by the help

help of a diſguiſe, and onely tell you that when I arriv'd to fifteen years of age an Inn-Keeper Married me, and carried me into the Country. For two years we liv'd very peaceably and comfortably together, but at lenghth the inſolent and imperious temper of my Huſband made me begin to ſhow my Natural humour. Once a week we ſeldom miſt of a Combat between us, which frequently prov'd ſo ſharp, that it was well if my Husband came off with a ſingle broken pate. His Peacemaker in amorous dalliances wrought not thoſe effects in me as uſually it doth with the reſt of our Sex, by which means the gaping wounds of our diſcontents and differences being not preſently ſalv'd up they became in a manner incurable.

I never was much inclineable to Venereal paſtimes, not but that I was willing enough to admit of them, but I ever hated that a Dunghill-Cock ſhould tread a Hen of the Game. *Being* ſtinted likewiſe of Money, my life grew altogether comfortleſs, and I look: on my condition as inſupportable, Wherefore as the onely remedy or expedient to mitigate my vexatious troubles, I contriv'd a way how I might ſometimes take a Purſe; I judg'd this reſolution ſafe enough, (if I were not taken in the very fact) for who could ſuſpect me to be a Robber, wearing abroad upon ſuch deſigns mans Apparel, but at home onely that which was ſuitable and agreeable to my own Sex. *Beſides*, none could have better encouragement and conveniency then my ſelf, for

keeping

keeping an Inn who is more proper to have in custody what charge my Guests brought into my house then my self; or if committed to my Husbands tutelage, I could not fail to inform my self of the richnes of the Booty. Moreover, the Hostess is the person whose company is most desired, before whom they are no ways scrupulous to relate which way they are going, and frequently what the affair was that led them that way.

Courage I knew I wanted not, (be you my impartial Judg, Sir) what then could hinder me from being successful in such an enterprize. Being thus resolved (I soon procur'd necessary Habiliments) for these my contrivances, and never miscarried in any of them till now. Instead of going to Market, or riding five or six miles about such a business, (the usual pretences with which I blinded my Husband) I would when out of sight ride a contrary road to this House (wherein we now are) and here Metamorphose my self, and being fitted at all points Pad uncontroulcably, coming off alwaies most Victoriouslie. Not long since my Husband had about thirtie pounds due to him some twenty Miles from his habitation, and designed such a day for its reception, Glad I was to hear of this, resolving now to be revenged of him for all those injuries and churlish outrages he had committed against me. I knew very well which way he went, and knew the time of his coming home; wherefore I way-laid him at his return

return. And happily as I would have it, he did not make me wait above three hours for him. I let him pass me, knowing that by the swiftness of my Horse (having two or three always ready in the Stable) I could easily overtake him, and so I did, riding with him but a mile or two before I could do my intended business. At last (looking about me) I saw the coast clear on every side; Wherefore riding up close to him, and laying hold of his Bridle, I clapt a Pistol to his breast, commanding him to deliver, or he was a dead man. My imperious Don seeing death before his face, had like to have sav'd me the labour by dying voluntarily without compulsion, and so amaz'd at his sudden surprizal, that he looke like an Apparion, or one lately risen from the dead. Sirrha (said I) be quick: but a dead Palsie had so seiz'd every part of him, that his eyes were incapable of directing his hands to his Pocket. But I soon recall'd his lost spirits by two or three smart blows with the flat of my Sword, which so awakened him out of that deep Lethargy he was in, that with much submissiveness he delivered me his moneys. After I had dismounted him and cut the Reins of his Bridle and Girts, I basted him soundly, till that I had made jelly of his bones, and that his flesh looke like *Egyptian Mummy*. Now you Rogue (said I) I am even with you, have a care the next time how you strike a woman (your wife I mean) for none but such as dare not fight a man will lift up his hand against the weaker vessel. Now you see what it is to provoke them, for if irrita-

ted

ted too much they are restless till they have accomplisht their satisfactory revenge. I have a good mind to end thy wicked courses with thy life, but that I am loath to be hang'd for *nothing*, such a worthless man. Farewell, this money shall serve me to purchase Wine to drink Healths to the confusion of such Rascally and mean spirited things, and so I left him.

She was about to have proceeded in such agreeable relations of her rencounters, when word was brought her up two Gentlemen below desired to speak with her, craving my excuse she went down, and in a little time returned with them: She made an Apologly to me for so doing, adding that if she had committed a crime herein, my future knowledg of those persons would extenuate it. By their effeminate Countenances I could not miss of judging rightly what they were, *viz.* Females. After several discourses we grew so familiar, that the longest continued friendship could not boast of more freedom.

Having talkt and drank our selves weary, we concluded to lie all in one Chamber, there being two Beds, what our Nocturnal passages were, I'le give the Reader leave to imagine. After some days and nights jovial frolicking, I took my leave of them.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXI.

Being now upon the Pad *alone, he baites at an Inn, with which he was acquainted, and there by the Holster is informed of a Booty which he pursued, but was soundly banged for his paines, loosing both his Horse, and what small matter he had left.*

VEry loath I was to part with these *Amazons*, neither should I, had not scarcity of Money called me away to look out for more. For no man could ever be better pleased with society, then I was in theirs; enjoining such persons whose courage and fidelity might vye with the most approved male friend, and reaping at the same time the choicest favours *Venus* can confer on her chiefest Favourites.

One remarkable passage concerning this *Female Robber*, I had like to have forgot; which was this, She would frequently *Pad* or rob on foot in Womans Apparel, but so disguised, that she could not easily be known: Getting a Cushion, or some such thing, (by putting it under her Cloaths to make her seem big with Child) she would usually walk abroad, it may be three or four miles at length, near some beaten Road. Thus had she the benefit of viewing all rid by. If she saw any single person by whose equipage she might imagine him to have his Pockets well furnished, before he came

near her, ſhe uſed to feign her ſelf both exceeding ſick and weary, groaning in a moſt pittiful manner. What mans heart could be ſo obdurate as to paſs her by neglected, and without taking any notice of her? Who would not proffer a big Bellied Woman (tired and indiſpoſed) the courteſie of riding behind them for a little way to refreſh her? As ſhe told me ſhe met with very few that did not take her up behind them ſeeing her in that deplorable condition. Having rid a pretty way ſeeing the Coaſt clear, and coming to a convenient place for to execute her deſign, ſhe would pretend the Gentlemans Hat, that rid before her, offended her eyes, moſt in point of civility would put it off, though they immediately put it on again: then would ſhe with a Cord with a nooze, which ſhe had ready for the purpoſe, clap it over his head, and ſo whipping off the Horſe pull the Man after her, oftentimes half ſtrangling him, ſerving ſome as the *Mutes* do the *Baſſas* with their black box and ſilk ſtring therein, when they are deſigned for death by the *Grand Seignors* appointment and command. After this would ſhe ſtrip them of what they had, hiding it in places ſhe contrived proper for concealment.

But to return where I left off: before I took my leave of her, perceiving the temper of this brave noble Spirit, and that it was Poetically inclined out of my true reſentment of her due merit, I gave her theſe Lines, which ſhe thankfully receiv-ed, though modeſtly denyed to concern her in the leaſt.

Stand back the Muſes, Mars, *come guide my pen,*
To ranke this Female Heroe *mongſt thy Men.*
So, ſo, 'tis well. Now let us to the matter,
'Tis ſuch a Subject that I *cannot flatter.*
The Pantalooners *ſtrut and* Muffetoons;
Taking great pains for to appear Buffoons.
They do ſeem men, and like 'em wear their Swords;
But dare not draw, ſuch may be kill'd with words:
Theſe love a Lady and affect perfumes;
Who lighter *are, (then what they wear) their* Plumes.
Thou ſcorneſt ſuch ſhadoes, *or* Chymæra's, *which*
Are good for nothing, but a Womans itch.
Thou loveſt that man alone, that dares in ſpight
Of fate, ſcorn Death *himſelf in fight.*
Thy actions ſpeak the man who dares deny it?
Believe this truth, or if you dare then try it,
'Twill be a favour to her, for they'l find,
That never man injoy'd ſo brave a mind.

Bidding this my *Minerva*, and her ſociates adieu, I rid on in the next road, without meeting any, I thought it requeſite to faſten on. At length I came to an Inn, where I was very well acquainted, and intended there to have refreſht my ſelf, but the Hoſtler prevented it, not ſuffering me to alight, telling me haſtily, that there was a Gentleman not an hour ſince baited here, who had in his Portmantue a conſiderable Purchaſe, that he was a poor ſpirited fellow, whom he knew, and that he ever had an abſolute antipothy to a naked Sword, and that he was gone ſuch a Road, &c. I ſtayed not ſo long as to drink, but withall poſſible expedition made after him; aſcending a ſmall Hill, I diſcovered him, who rid an ordinary pace, wherefore I ſlacked mine to cool my Horſe; however I ſoon

overtook him, and rode by him, not without viewing him well; riding down the Hill I did alight, purposely that he might overtake me, which he did; being past I mounted, and at the very bottom I bid him stand and diliver instantly, or he was a dead man. Sir-sis-sir, (said he lisping very much) I-I-I-I am going home. I bid him not make these purposed delays least he smarted, and therefore wisht him to dispatch and give me his money; for I was informed (*I* told him) that he had a summ behind him. T-t-t-'tis true (he replyed) b-b-but it is my Fathers M-m-money. Hang your Father and his stuttering Coxcomb too, (said *I*) I must have what you have. W-wh-why then you shall, (said he) and with that drew out a Pocket Pistol and fired it at me; which made my Horse start and very much surprising me, expecting not the least resistance from such a seemingly ignorant and cowardly fellow, by that meanes he had time and liberty to draw his Sword (which was almost as broad as a Chopping-Knife) and came upon me so furiously, that I am sure I had not time to defend my self, he so laid a bout him, that I soon lay at his mercy. I was forced to beg very hard for my life, which I obtained with very much ado. Then he fell to my Pockets not leaving any suspected place for money unsearcht; by which I gueſt him to have belonged to our profession, and was not mistaken, as you shall understand by and by. He went to my Horse and viewing him, he seemed to like him very well. Wherefore coming to me (for he had cut me off my Horse) ha-ha-hark you (said he) you are but a raw thief, a me-me-meer Child, and it is but fit that you should be sent to a Ma-ma-Master to be ta-

ta ta-taught knowledge, and be whipt for your foo-foo-fooliſhneſs. You ſaid you muſt have my Fa-a-Fathers money, but I tell you I muſt have your hau-hau-Horſe, and ſo farewel. He was ſo kind as to leave me his Horſe, which was a pittiful Jade, however neceſſity compelled me to mount him, and anger ſpur'd me on to be revenged of the Hoſtler, but I better conſidered with my ſelf, that probably that Horſe was known there, and ſo I ſhould be detected, wherefore I rid a contrary way, and took up my lodging in a place I never had been in before. Aſſoon as I had alighted abundance of people flockt about me; ſeeing me all bloody, to know the cauſe thereof. Whereupon I related in a very doleful manner how this ſad accident befell me. That travelling to ſuch a place with about one hundred and fifty pieces of Gold, I was ſet upon by five or ſix luſty Rogues, who robed me, and becauſe I made what reſiſtance I could, to ſave what I had, it being my whole eſtate, they had thus barbarouſly mangled me, hacking and hewing me till they grew weary, and at laſt with much difficulty eſcapt with my life. There was a general ſorrow for me, pittying me ſo much that the Inhabitants ſtrove one with another, who ſhould ſhow me moſt kindneſs. A Chyrurgeon was preſently ſent for, who (as he was a Baber too) *Barbarian* like dreſt my Wounds; ſome were imployed in procuring me Cordials, and getting me things neceſſary; others were ſent out to make inquiſition after the Thieves.

This Gentleman that ſerved me this trick was (as I underſtood afterwards) an High-way man himſelf, who being well born and bred, but his

Father being either at that time unable or unwilling to supply him with what Moneys his laviſh expences required, and nature having beſtowed on him a ſtout reſolute heart, and ſtrength anſwering his courage, betook himſelf to the *Trad*. In which profeſſion he behaved himſelf ſo gallantly, that he was ſtiled the Father or Governor of his Tribe. But his attempts proved not alwayes ſucceſsful, ſo that there was hardly a County in *England*, wherein he had not been in Priſon; being frequently arraigned for his life, but having eminent and potent friends he ſtill came off; this did his Father and Kindred ſo frequent, that they grew weary, and he narrowly eſcaping with his life one time, and finding that his Kinred mattered not much if he were hanged, he ſubmitted himſelf to his Father, making a ſolemn proteſtation that he would never follow the like courſes again: whereupon his Father ſetled an Annual Eſtate upon him, on which he now liveth very orderly. Thus much briefly of my over comer.

Here did I lie three or four days before a perſon came, of whom I cannot but give you a Character, ſince the paſſages of his life hath been ſo remarkable and notorious, and from the ſhort relation of which I queſtion not but the Reader will reap much benefit and ſatisfaction. For indeed examples have ſo great an influence and power upon the actions of man's life, as that we find men are more wrought upon by preſident then precept. To this intent preceding Generations, have made it their grand care and labour, not only to communicate to their Poſterity the lives of good and honeſt men, that thereby man might fall in love with

the

the ſmooth and beautiful face of virtue; but have alſo taken the ſame pains to recount the actions of criminal and wicked perſons, that by the dreadful aſpects of *Vice*, they may be deterred from imbracing her.

CHAP. XXXII.

He here reneweth his acquaintance with a cuning fellow, that formerly ſtudyed the Law, and ſince made it his ſole buſineſs to practiſe the abuſe thereof.

ABout four dayes after I was wounded, there came into the ſame Inn where I lay a Gentleman, who hearing ſome of the Houſe diſcourſing of the Robbery that was lately committed, he deſired to be particularly informed, which they did, adding that the robed Gentleman lay wounded in the houſe; he inquired of them my name, which they told him, as I had told them, having a name for every moneth in the year. Very deſirous he was, if it might be no diſturbance to me, to give me a viſit, unto which I condeſcended, a ſervant to that intent deſiring to know my pleaſure. Aſſoon as he entered the Room, I verily thought I knew him, though I could not for the preſent call to mind where I had ſeen him. I was ſo muffled about the Chops, that it was impoſſible for him to have any knowledge of me. He ſat down by me, and askt me various queſtions, to which I gave him *convenient* ſatisfaction. At laſt I recal'ed my me-

mory, and askt him if his name was not so——— he answered me affirmatively. Dear friend (said I) I am glad to see you, come be not amazed; my right name is so ——-with that he imbraced me, and was overjoyed that he so casually found me out. Laying aside all formal niceties I imbosomed my self to him, not mincing the truth in the least; for we knew our selves *Birds of a Feather*, *Rogues together*. He condoled my wounded condition, and comforted me by telling me, that he would not leave me till I was well, and that he would procure such a *Plaister* for the Wounds I had received, that should prove very effectual. *In* short it was this; by following closely the footsteps of his crafty advice, I got of the Country the one hundred and fifty pound, I pretended to be robed of. He stayed with me above a fortnight, enjoying what pleasures the Countrey was capable to afford us. Being by our selves (for so we designed the major part of every day) we discourſed interchangable of nothing but our adventures, &c. how we might lay new plots for our advantage: I gave him the epitome of what I had done, since I left him, who took more pleasure in the relation of my Roguries, then the *Quaker* did in Courting his Mistress a *Mare*, near *Rochester*. But when he began to relate his Villanies, I was struck dumb with admiration; and what cannot a man do if indued with the strength of his Natural parts, sharpness of wit, quickness of apprehension, depth and solidnes of judgment, with a tenacious memory. Now because he ever had a smooth and insinuating tongue with the command thereof, I shall give him leave to tell his own tale.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIII.

The Life of a Law-abuſig Cheat,

Dear Friends,

FOR what I am beholding, it is to Nature alone, for as I am aſhamed of my Birth, ſo I cannot condemn my Father for not beſtowing Education on me, ſince his condition was ſo low; yet his Spirit ſo high, that he would not beg himſelf, though ready to ſtarve, yet would permit me, which was the ſole ſupport of his and my life. I was ten year old before I could meet with any preferment; one day Fortune favouring me offered to my view a Comodity, which with confidence and dexterity, I might carry off undiſcovered. My hands preſently ſucceſſfully effected what my mind ſuggeſted; it was but of ſmall value, the utmoſt I could get for it was a Link, with which that night I more then trebled what it coſt. This courſe I followed by night, and ran in errands by day, ſo that I had furniſhed my ſelf both with Cloaths and Money. In proceſs of time I was admitted as a Servant into a Scriveners Houſe; my Maſter taking a liking to me, put me to a Writing-School, where being capacitated for his buſineſs, he puts me into the Shop, and inſtructs me in his imployment. I had not been there long before I made my ſelf every eminent, by ſtudying the Law the Rudiments whereof I underſtood as well, as I knew how to engroſs an Indenture. This made my

Maſter

Master esteem of me, and that estimation made me proud, and being not yet bound his Apprentice, I thought my self to know better things then to be his servant any longer, and so left him. Then was I with an Attorney a while, afterwards with a Counsellor, till thinking I had Law enough, I took an House resolving to see what I could do with it my self. I solicited several mens businesses, giving a general content, insomuch that my credit and reputation increased dayly. Now did I marry for Wealth, having not the least affection; for her face lookt much like a Gammon of Bacon with the skin off. Sometime I lived with her; too long for any delight I took in her; and being resolved to be rid of her, this Stratagem I used. I shewed her more kindness then formerly, pretending I would do nothing but what I would consult with her about, which so wrought upon her love, that she would have been content to have sacrificed her Soul for my Interest, and made her withal so opinionative, that she judged every silly and unsavory expression she uttered was not less then an *Oracle*. Having brought my business thus far to perfection, I came home one evening very mellancholy; very inquisitive she was to know the cause. My Dear, (said I) I will not conceal any thing from thee; such a Gentleman hath injured me, and I cannot rest till I be revenged Thou knowest my Nature, if wronged I am implacable it is a fault, I cannot help. Come, come said my Wife let us go to Bed, and there we will consult. Being there, she askt me how we should bring our revenge about? I seemed to study a while, ----I have it now, (said I, thou art with Childe; he is one tender of his reputation; tax him

him for being the Father of it, and that will do the work to my full content; very loath she was because of the talk of the people, but I satisfied this poor silly harmless soul, by telling her that as long as I knew her chast, it was no matter what others said of her; whereupon she condescended, and had the Person before the Justice, where she swore positively that she was got with Child by that Gentleman, I presently took advantage of her Confession, turned her off, leaving them both to the disposal of the Spiritual Court. This was my first prank.

One of my Clients another time, having bought a good handsome Tenement, and so much confidence as to put me in Possession; my Client having purchased an Estate in the Country, was forced to be there to look after the management of his Rural affaires, for some certain time: I took this opportunity to forge a Lease to my self, at an easie Rent, from him that constituted me his Trustee. I soon found a Chapman for it, and sold this Lease, receiving a good round Fine, which had been a penny-worth indeed, had the title been good; unto this man I delivered Possession, who dwelt in it till the return of the right owner. who coming to his said House, wondered to find every thing so contrary to his expectation, and demanding of the Tenent by what power he inhabited in that dwelling, the poor man shewed him his forged Lease, declaring that he had paid his fine to such a man, nominating me, who at that time was not to be found. The Landlord cou'd do no less then eject him his House, but finding him so grosly abused, required nothing for the time he was in it, but left

him

him to the Law to require ſatisfaction of me. The abuſed being very much troubled, he ſhould be thus deceived, made ſo ſtrickt inquiry after me, and ſo unwearied in his ſearch, that at laſt he found me out, who ſaid, nothing ſhould ſerve his turn but he would for this Cheat have the rigor of the Law executed upon me, knowing of what a dangerous conſequence it was, I got my adverſary arreſted in an action of a thouſand pounds, who wanting Bayle was committed to *Newgate*, where grief releaſed me by his death from enſuing prejudice. I afterwards forged a deed of Sale of an Houſe hard by the former, which would have made more for my advantage, had not this man diſcovered my deſign, which made me the more inveterate againſt him and his. For this was alwayes my temper, though nothing could provoke me to expreſs my anger in company (as having a perfect command over my paſſions in that nature) yet if any durſt proſecute his own or friends right in oppoſition to me, I ſeldom left him, till I had either abſolutely undone him; or ſo impoveriſht him, that he ſhould be in no condition to hurt me, or help himſelf, making him at laſt confeſs that he had been better to have ſat down with his firſt loſs. And this I effected the eaſier, having a conſcience that ſcrupled nothing, and inſtruments that would ſwear any thing. Theſe contrivances of mine made me generally reputed a *ſubtile* and *knowing man*, which brought me in multiplicity of buſineſs, with conſiderable in-comes. Neither did I alone ſolicite for ſuch as were concerned in the Law, but I had my concernment with *Lifters*, who did put ſo great a confidence in me, that what they

got

got was left solely to my disposal, either by sale or pawn, for which I had my brokage, and something else beside. Now was I grown so famous (my Garb adding much to my fame which was very splendid) that if any intricate controversie, reference, or Law suit arose among my Neighbours, they knew no person fitter to make their appeal to then my self. If any again wanted either Money, Goods, nay a *cooler* of concupiscense, I was adjudged the best *Procurer*. By these means I tumbled in Money, and to let the World know it, I wore a several Suit every day, having besides Habits suitable to any design. Now did those that knew me not, even adore me; those that were acquainted with me, out of fear were forced to show me more then ordinary respects. I confess had I now walkt in a *medium*, this had been the time (as they say there is a time alloted to every man) to have made my self for ever. But Knavery was so implanted in my Nature, that I could not forbear cheating the deerest friend I had, if he intrusted me, circumvent every man, that had more honest then my self; and though I was sure to damm Soul and Body, yet I must attempt the destruction of my adversary; and to speak the truth I did not stick to betray my friend if any advantage would accrue to me thereby. For one trick I served an ancient Widdow, I now and then find some internal Gripings, I cannot tell whether they proceed from conscience, because I never knew what conscience was; but this it is. A Gentlewoman of my acquaintance, whose sole dependance was upon Lodgers, and having taken up a great many Goods to a considerable value to furnish

niſh her Houſe, beſiting the reception of any perſon of quality, for which ſhe was indebted, and having too often put off her Creditor, came to me deſiring the favour of me to procure her fifty pound, telling me, that ſuch a Knight, and ſuch a Squire would ſtand bound with her; that will not do (ſaid I) for the Gentry have ſo many tricks to keep Citicens out of their Money, that they will have better ſecurity. Perceiving her preſent neceſſities were very urgent, I knew I could do any thing with her; wherefore I perſwaded her to confeſs a Judgement, ſhe agreed to it. I told her ſuch a day it ſhould be done, but I would ſpeak with the party firſt; according to the day prefixt I came, bringing with me a Warrant of Attorny, with a friend or two to atteſt it; ſhe confided ſo much in me, as to ſeal before ſhe received the moneys. That being done; now come along with me (ſaid I) to ſuch a place, where the Money lyeth ready. As we were going, there was a ſtop in a Lane by Carts and Coaches, and by the help thereof dodged her, ſhe ſeeing me no more till it was too late; for I came with an Execution a while after, and carryed away every penny worth of Goods ſhe had. Yet ſo civil *I* was, that I would not let her ſee it done, knowing it could not but be a great trouble to her, to that intent about an half hour before, I ſent for her in my name, far enough diſtant from her own Habitation. In this nature, with ſome variation as to the manner, I ſerved ſeveral. Knowing I had a plentiful invention, which ſeldome failed me, I ſcorned to be ſo idle as to make uſe of one trick only, to bring about my ends, and as I had ſeveral, I never made uſe of one trick twice,

for

for fear of being *smoakt*. I seldome went abroad, but I had some of my Complices at my heels, rarely going together, unless necessity required it. I went into a *Coffe-House* one day, and sat me down at a common Table; (as the Room is to all Comers) a little after came in one of my *Imps*, and sits himself down too. I had then a very curious Ring upon my finger, which a Gentleman opposite to me perceiving, pray Sir (said he) do me the favour as lend me a sight of that Ring on your finger, I presently delivered it him; having viewed it and commended it, my Rogue must needs desire a sight of it too from this Gentleman, who thinking no harme gave it into his hands, after he had look't on it a while, he fairly marcht off with it; I saw him but would not in the least take notice thereof, knowing where to find him. The Gentleman imagined nothing to the contrary, but that the right Owner had received it again. A little while after I demanded very courteously my Ring, excusing his detention thereof upon the account of forgetfulness. The Gentleman starting, rep'yed, Sir I thought you had had it long since! I told him I had it not, and as I delivered it to him, *I* should require it from no other person. He pisht at it and in the conclusion bad me take my course; and so I did, having first taken witness of the standers by I sued him, and recovered the value of my Ring twice over, producing two in Court that swore point blank, that the one of them sold it me for so much------One thing I confess I frequently made use of, which was this; If any person dyed, and none durst administer, but leave the Deceased's Goods to the Creditors, then would I be sure to

make

make my ſelf a principal Creditor by a forged Bond, and thereupon ſue out Letters of adminiſtration, and ſweeping all away, I wiped the noſe of other Creditors.

CHAP. XXXIV.

What a notable revengeful trick he ſerved the Turnkey of Ludgate.

I Went one time to ſee a Priſoner in *Ludgate*, but thinking to come out again as eaſily as I went in, I found my ſelf juſt as the Picture I have often ſeen upon the *Exchange*, wherein is repreſented a man plunging himſelf with much eaſe into the great end of the Horn, but with the greateſt difficulty can hardly ſqueeze his Head through the other end. Hell Gates ſtand ever open to let all ſouls in, but none are ſuffered to go out. Here I waited two hours for the return of the Turn-key, fretting my ſelf even to death for being detained from my urgent occaſions. At length he came, I told him what an injury he did me, inſtead of excuſing himſelf, he returned me very ſcurvy language, which provoked my paſſion ſo much, that though I ſaid little, yet my invention was preſently at work to be revenged. Not long after I got a poor fellow to be Arreſted for an inconſiderable debt, adviſing him to turn himſelf inſtantly over to *Ludgate*. In a ſhort time the poorneſs of this mans condition was generally known, and he himſelf

ſelf pretending he was almoſt ſtarved, got liberty to put in what ſlender ſecurity, he could procure for his true impriſonment, and ſo had leave to go abroad. In the mean time I had got a Bond of the Priſoner of fourſcore pound for the payment of forty, and ſo went privately and entered an action of Debt. I told the Priſoner the next time he went out he ſhould run away, which he did, neither was there any ſecurity to be found, then did I bring my action againſt the Keeper, with my *Knights* of the *Poſt*, and ſo recovered the money.

CHAP. XXXV.

What a freak he play'd upon a Jeweller.

I Was intimately acquainted with a Jeweller in *Foſter-Lane*, whom I often helped to the ſale of Rings and Jewels, ſo that my credit was very good with him. Being one time above in his work room, I chanced to ſpy a very rich Jewel, whereupon I told him I could help him to the ſale thereof; my Lady ſuch a one having lately ſpoke to me about ſuch a thing. He gladly delivered it me at ſuch a price to ſhew it her. But I only carried it to another to have one exactly made like it with counterfeit ſtones. Before I went I ask him if the Lady diſlike it, whether I might leave it with his Wife or ſervant? I, I (ſaid he) to either will be ſufficient. I was forced to watch one whole day to ſee when he went out, and being gone, preſently went to the Shop, and enquired of his Wife for her

Husband; she answered me, he was but just gone. Well Madam (said I) you can do my business as well as he, 'tis only to deliver these stones into your custody; and so went off undiscovered. Not long after I met him in the street, carrying displeasure in his looks; Sir (said he) I thought a friend would not have served me so; but I denyed it stifly. Whereupon he was very angry, and told me he would sue me; I valued not his threats, and so left him; I had not gone many paces, before I met with a friend, that complained to me he had lost a very valuable Locket of his Wives, it being stolen from her. Glad I was that this should fall out so pat to my purpose; I asked him to give me a description of it, which he did punctually. Now said I what will you give me, if I tell you where it is? Any thing in reason. Then go to such a Shop in *Foster-Lane* (*the same Shop where I cheated the man of his Ring*) and there ask peremptorily for it; I was there at such a time and saw it, and he would have had me help him to a customer for it; I'le stay at the Star Tavern for you. Away he went and demanded his Locket: The Jeweller denyed he had any such thing, (as well he might.) Upon this he returned to me, and by (this I had another with me) and told me what he said. Whereupon I advised him to have a Warrant for him to fetch him before a Justice of Peace. and that I and my friend (which saw as much as *I*) would swear it. The Goldsmith was Instantly seized on by a Constable and assoon as he saw who they were that would swear against him, desired the Gentleman to drink a Glass of Wine, and then tender'd him satisfaction: But I had so ordered the business that it would not

be

be taked unless he would give us all three general releases, he knowing the danger that might ensue to life and estate if we persisted, consented to the proposal.

CHAP. XXXVI.

He puts a notable Cheat upon a Gentleman concerning his House.

WAlking one time in the Fields with an Attendant or two, who would be constantly bare before me if in company with any persons of quality, but otherwise *hail fellow well met*, I was got as far as *Hackney*, ere I thought where I was; for my thoughts were busied about designes, and my wit was shaping them into a form; casting my eye on the one side of me, I saw the prettiest built and well situated House that ever my eyes beheld, I presently had a covetous desire to be Master thereof. I was then as fortune would have it in a very gentile Garb; I walkt but a little way farther and I soon found out a Plot to accomplish my desires. I returned and knockt at the Gate, and demanded of the Servant whether his Master was within? I understood he was, and thereupon desired to speak with him. The Gentleman came out to me himself, desiring me to walk in. After I had made a general Apology, I told him my business, which was only to request the favour of him, that I might have the previledge to bring a Workman to supervise his House, and to take the Dimensions

thereof, becauſe I was ſo well pleaſed with the Building, that I eagarly deſired to have another built exactly after that pattern. The Gentleman could do leſs then grant me ſo ſmall a civility. Coming home I went to a Carpenter, telling him I was about buying an Houſe in *Hackney*, and that I would have him accompany me to give me (in private) the eſtimate. Accordingly we went, and found the Gentleman at home, who entertained me kindly as a ſtranger. In the mean time the Carpenter took an exact account of the Butts and Bounds of the Houſe on Paper; which was as much as I deſired for that time.

Paying the Carpenter well, I diſmiſt him, and by that Paper had a Leaſe drawn with a very great fine, (mentioned to have been paid) at a ſmall Rent; Witneſſes thereunto I could not want. ſhortly after I demanded Poſſeſſion; the Gentleman thinking me out of my wits, only laugh at me, I commenced my ſuit againſt him, and brought my own Creatures to ſwear the ſealing and delivery of the Leaſe, the Carpenters evidence, beſides which was grounded on Probable Circumſtances, whereupon I had a Verdict: The Gentleman underſtanding what I was, though it ſafer to compound with me, and looſe ſomething, rather then looſe all.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVII.

How he cheated a Scrivener under the pretence of bringing him good Security for an Hundred pound which he would borrow.

ATtiring my self in one of the richeſt Garbs I had, I went to a Scrivener in *Bow-Lane*, and acquainted him I had an occaſion for an Hundred pound. He demanded the Names of my Security. I told him where they lived, two perſons of eminent worth (whom I knew were gone into the Country) and deſired him to make enquiry, but in it to be private and modeſt. The Scrivener according to my deſires went and found them by report to be what they were real, able, and ſufficient men: two or three dayes after I called upon him to know whether I might have the money upon the Security propounded. He told me I might bringing the perſons, and appointed me a day. According to the time I came with two of my Complices attired like wealthy grave Citizens, who perſonated ſuch perſons ſo to the life, that the Scrivener could not entertain the leaſt ſuſpition. The money being ready I told it over, and putting it up in a bag, I and my inſignificant Bondſmen ſealed, leaving the Scrivener to another enquiry after us, whom if he did not meet I was confident he could never find out by reaſon of our feigned Names.

It chanced that my forged and fictitious name

shook hands with that of a Gentlemans in *Surry*, who was a great purchaser, which I came to know by being accidentally in his company the next right after I had cheated this credulous Scribe, understanding likewise from him the exact place of his abode; and as the Devil would have it his Christian name was the same as well as his Surname with that of mine I had borrowed. Whereupon I went to the Scrivener again and told him that I had now a fair opportunity to benefit my self very much by a purchase, provided he would assist me with two hundred pound more. But Sir said I, take notice (in careless and generous frankeness) that it is out of a particular respect to you that you might profit by me that I come again, neither will I now give you any other Security then my own Bond, though I did otherwise before. But if you will desire to be satisfied as to my estate, pray let your Servant go to such a place in *Surry*, there is a piece of Gold to bear his charges, and I will satisfie you farther for the loss of your Servants time. He being greedy of gains very efficiously promised me to do what I required, and would speedily give me an answer. Imagining what time his Servant would return, I repaired to him again, and understood from him by the sequel that he received as much satisfaction as in reason any man could require. Hereupon I had on my own Bond the Money paid me. I cannot but laugh to think how strangely the *Surry* Gentleman was surprized when the Money becoming due was demanded of him, and how like the figure of man in Hangings the Scrivener looked when he found himself cheated.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVIII.

How he was revenged on a Broker for arresting him for some Goods he had past his word for upon his friends accompt.

NOtwithstanding I daily thus almost cheated one or other, procuring thereby considerable summs of money, yet by my Drinking, Whoreing, and defending my self from such as I had wronged I seldome kept any money by me. One day as I walkt the streets securely as I thought, a fellow fastned his *Flesh Hookes* on my shoulder. Looking about to see what this sudden *Clap* meant, I saw a fellow behind me whose face lookt ten times worse then those *Jewes* that are pictured in Aras-hangings whipping Christ; his mouth was as largely vaulted as that within *Aldersgate*; his Visage was almost eaten through with pock-holes, every hole so big that they would haue serued for Children to play at Cherry-pit. His Nose resembled an Hand-saw; take both head and face together and it appeared like the Saracens on *Snow-hill*; questionless some Succubus begot him on a Witch. Having a little recovered my self from my amazement; I ask him what his business was with me? He spake but little, leaving his errand to his Mace (which he shewed me) to relate. Away they carried me to *Woodstreet* at the Kings-head, from whence I sent for Baile, which speedily came to me, having put in Baile to one action I found another entered,

having done the like that I found another, half a douzen more bearing it company; wherefore thanking my friends for the trouble I had put them too, I deſired them to leave me, reſolving to go to *Ludgate*. The two Serjeants that arreſted me conducted me thither, having my name entred in the Paper-houſe, as Horſes in *Smithfield* are in the Tole-booth, *Cerberus* turned the Key and ſet the door as wide open as *Weſtminſter* Hall Gate in the Term time to Country Clyents to receive me from my Hell guides, which puts me in mind of that old Verſe.

Noctes atque dies patet atri janua ditis.

I no ſooner was entered into this inchanted Iſle where ſome lie wind-bound ſometimes ſeven years together, but a fellow (whom at firſt ſight I took to be a Gardener, becauſe he had a kind of *Reddiſh* beard, *and turn'd up* withal) came to me, and underſtanding I was a Priſoner ſeemed mighty courteous, prefering me his Chamber for my Garniſh ſake. I acccpted his kindneſs and went with him to view this Cobweb-hung-chamber, for ſo it proved; I demanded of him who ſhould be my Bed-fellow? that Gentleman there Sir ſaid he that ſits by the fire ſide: I could not forbear ſmiling, for he was a fat ſquobby fellow, though his brain ſeemed to be lean. I believe he was his own Barber, and was forc'd to make uſe of a Knife inſtead of a Razzer; for his beard it was cut round like a rubbing bruſh. Certainly had all the skin of his body been like that of his face, it would have ſerved excellent well when he was dead to make cloke bags of. Not content with this lodging, I ſought out another, liking it ſomewhat better then the former,

former, I pitcht on it. Assoon as they understood my resolution, they wurried me presently like angry Mastiffes barking for their Garnish; I told them they should have it to morrow, at which they grumbled like the greatest string of a Base-Viol. Before I went to Bed I must pay for a pair of sheets that never came nigh *Holland* by three hundred miles, and out of much civility my Bed-fellow brought me a candle not so long as his nose to light me to Bed.

The next morning I made it my business to get out assoon as I could; some I paid, others I nonsuited, and so got clear. Being out I resolved not to rest till I had revenged my self on this Broker that had thus troubled me. I needed not means for the Devil seldom failed to help my invention. I pretended to go into the Country; and in order to it pack'd up a Trunk of most I had most valueable and portable, and getting a Porter sent it to an Inn where a *Norwich* Carryer used to lye, but I knew him to be gone the day before. Going along with the Porter I enquired for such a Carryer, but they told me he was gone and would not return till the next week, I ask them where I might lay my Trunk safe. they shewed me a Room, where bidding the Porter sit down I called for some Ale, telling the Porter moreover that I would have him be a witness of what there was in the Trunk, least I should be dishonestly dealt by; whereupon I unlockt it, desiring him to take notice, which he did, and to be more sure took an Inventory in Writing. Drinking; now I think upon it (said I) Porter, it will not be so safe to leave this here in a publique house as in a friends, wherefore prethee go buy

a Cord, and thou shalt carry it elsewhere. Whilest he was gone, I took out the thiefest things and put in rubbish or what I could get, and so lockt it again. The Porter returning we corded the Trunk, and carried it to this Broker, who took it kindly from me that I would intrust him after our controversie, and received it. The next week I told him I would call for it in order to the sending it into the Country. The time being come I took the same Porter with me and demanding the Trunk, it was forthwith delivered me. Come Porter said I, you must uncord it again, for I have present use for something therein contained, which being done, I seemingly amaz'd, cry'd out I was rob'd, taxing the Broker for so doing, villifying him for his knavery. He protested that he never lookt on it to his knowledge since the receipt thereof. Well Sir (said I) this shall not serve your turn, this honest Porter knows how differently it is fraught from what he saw it at first. In a great seeming heat I left him, but before he slept I sent a couple of Serjeants to him, who arrested him, coming to tryal by the assistance of two (resolv'd Jurors) and this Porter, I overthrew him and recovered above forty pound, besides costs of Suite.

CAHP. XXXIX.

How he cozened a rich Usurer, and a young Tradesman.

BEing resolved to go and look out some of my Consorts to rejoyce together for my good

success in my advantagious revenge, I met with an old Comrade that had lately *heav'd a Booth, Anglice* broken open a Shop, who told me he had a quantity of good Comodities, and desired me to put them off for him, knowing that I dealt in Brokeage in goods indirectly come by, I promised him I would. The next day he delivered what he had into my hands, I instantly carried them to an old Usurer that would grasp at any thing, telling him I onely desired to Mort-gage them for such a time, requesting to lend me fifty pounds thereon. He looking upon them to be thrice the value of that summe lent me freely, and in my sight took the Goods and laid them in a place next his Bed-Chamber. The same day I met with this friend who demanded of me whether I had done his business? No not yet (said I) it will be to morrow first: However let us drink a glass of Wine, which he readily consented to. Having drank pretty smartly he could not contain himself, (so powerful are the operations of Wine as it frequently makes a man divulge that which carrieth in it inevitable ruine) *I* say he told me whose Shop it was he rob'd, and at what time. I seem'd to take little notice then, though I intended to make good use of it. Parting with him I went streightway to the person rob'd, and told him that accidentally I was informed of his late loss, and that my intent of coming was out of a principle of honesty to assist him in the recovery of what was stolen from him. But before I acqueinted him with any thing I required of him a Bond of ten pound if I helpt him to his Goods, which he granted me. I advised him to get the Lord chief Justices Warrant which he did,

and

and taking ſome friends with him, I directed them where they ſhould go, and in what place they ſhould find them. He would have had me gone with him, but that I excuſed my ſelf, alledged it would be inconvenient. Taking a Conſtable with them they went and found what they ſought for according to my direction, which they ſeized, leaving the old man to condole his loſs, which had been no great matter had not his life lain in his Purſe.

Having thus carried on my miſchievous contrivances with continued impunity; the next I fell on was a young Merchant, to whom I went gentilely habited with a foot-boy waiting at my heeles, I look out ſeveral Commodities, and laid them aſide, aſſuring him that I would ere long lay out a conſiderable parcel of money with him. We diſcours'd upon the price, and in the concluſion cloſed. The next day I appointed the Goods to be ſent home to my Houſe, and in the interim deſired him to go along with me, and accept of what poor accommodation my habitation would afford him, under the pretence of being better acquainted: but my deſign was to raiſe in him a good opinion of me, for I had one Room eſpecially very richly hung with coſtly Furniture. My motion was entertained, and away we went; where I treated him nobly, the next day the Commodities were ſent in with his Servant, who expected his money; but I pretended that my Caſheer was abroad, and ſo deſired him to call the next morning; he did, but then I was not to be ſpoken with. Thus he did ſo often till the young man was weary. At laſt the Maſter himſelf came who met me juſt as I was going out, who had not the patience to ask for his money.

money; but presently railed most bitterly, calling me cheat, knave, &c. and that he would have a Warrant for me instantly.

Being gone, I was as nimble as himself, having a couple of my Emissaries ready for him against his return. It was not long before he came strutting with a Constable. Perceiving him coming I sent my two friends out with their Warrant, and putting into the Constables hand charged him in the Kings name to execute it upon such a one, meaning the Merchant. who dared not deny it but carried him before a Justice, before whom my two Rogues swore flat felony, and so was committed. Sending for friends they advised him to make an end thereof. Whereupon I was much solicited, and upon consideration I consented to cause my friends to forbear prosecution.

And yet I have not fully unbowell'd the huge bulk of my villany, that hath proved so burdensome to the World, and destructive to so many Families; wherefore give me leave a little farther to anatomize my own vicious nature, and I shall so lay open the ulcers and sores of my impostumed machinations, apparent to the sight of every one, that the most Ospray and Owle-eyed spectator shall confess there never was a more necessary and cammodious discovery revealed. Brother said I, for so I must call *you* now, your flagitious deeds claiming that title, and must be compelled I see to give you superiority, the upperhand, for I am confident the line of other mens inventions never sounded the Sea of a more deep and dreadful mischief. When I consider how powerful and imperious vice is of late grown; and what horrid

facts

facts are committed every where by licentious and wicked men that swarm in all places: I admire that the Fabrick of the earth is not continually palsyed by Earth quakes, since there is a Creator above that oversees such actions. That the Earth her self (though an indulgent Mother) doth not receive into her Womb her off-spring, and therein for shame hide them; that the air is not choaked with Foggs, and that black pitchy mists do not perpetually masque the face of Heaven, and leave the World in obscurity: and that the Sun doth not hide his face from seeing such enormous crimes blacker then is the Eclipse of his countenance; and lastly that the Sea is not turned to blood to put us in mind of the cruel and remorseless usages of one another: our kiudness being commonly attended with discourtesies of a Vermilion hue. Thus Brother you see I am sensible of my miscarriages, but want the power to regulate my life. I would have proceeded but that I found this discourse grated in his ears, wherefore I desired him to prosecute his story which he did in this manner.

CHAP.

CHAP. XL.

He discovers the subtlety of some Citizens he had to do withal by Broking for them, relating his own craft and cunning, and what the consequent was the ruine of young Gentlemen.

Like an Hawk as I told you I flew at all Game, not confining my self to any one thing particularly, where I could abuse the Law I did, and if I had an opportunity to Trepan, I seldome failed, &c. Some part of my time I spent in the enquiry of what young Heires were arrived, into whose society I was sure by one meanes or other to insinuate my self. These Country Wood-cocks I knew how to catch with a City Spring; whom I very well understood, had rather be out of the World then out of the fashion, who would be brave for the present time, though their Gallantry cost them all their future Fortunes. I commonly laid my plot thus: Sir, you undervalue your self by the meanness of your Habit, it being so unsuitable to your quality; if you want money you cannot want credit, having a fair promising estate in reversion; if you are willing I will find you out a believing Mercer. Returning me many thanks it may be he would be in such hast as to send me presently. He could not be so eager to have his gaudy desires satisfied as I forward to accomplish them. I

knew

knew where to go readily to one with whom I went snips; in so saying I would not have any think I throw dirt upon that noble profession. If I discover the fraud of any particular person as long as I name him not, I do him no wrong, but if I detect by what deceitful and sinister means he worketh upon the infirmity of the youth of a green-witted Gallant, it may serve for an *use of instruction*. In the most famous Universities there are some Dunces resident, that by disgracing themselves disgrace also their fellow Students. In the most virtuous Courts there will be some Parasites. So in the most goodly and glorious City under Heaven Canopy, there are some Aspes lurking that sting the reputation of their Brethren by their poysonous and corrupt dealings. There are Knaves in all *Trades* but *Book-selling*.

But to my purpose a young Gentleman coming out of *Norfolk* to see the City and finding so many (beneath him in Estate) gallant it so much above him, he grew very melancholy; happning to be in his company, and indifferently well acquainted with him, I askt him the cause of his sadness? after I had prest him very much, he ingenuously confest the true original of his pensiveness. Pish said I, is that all, let me alone to effect what you desire; neither shall you wait longer then the morrow. Leaving my Gentleman, away I went to a person fit for my purpose, and gave him an account of my business: glad he was, thankt me for my paines, promising me a reward, and would needs have me to a Tavern to consult this affair. Having concluded every thing, I repaired the next day to my Gentleman, who over-joyed to see me, was impatient

impatiant to know whether his wishes were consummated. Come along with me said I, and we will try what we can doe. I have been very importunate with the Mercer, but as yet I cannot mollify him, it may be your presence may do much. Finding him in the Shop, I called him aside, and told him this was the Gentleman. My young Gent. that would be a Gallant presently, fell aboard him (and with much fervency and protestations) he wooed the Mercer to credit him for 30 *l.* worth of commodities. I called him aside, what will 30 *l.* worth doe, take up an 100 *l.* worth, and what you use not, I will dispose by sale to furnish your Pockets with money. He thankt me kindely for my advice and returned to the Mercer, who asked him, if he should credit him with so much, what security would he Propound? This struck my young Gent. as dumb as a Gods-head. The Mercer perceiving he had nothing to say, plaid the *Rope-maker*, being extreme *backward* to trust him; Bonds he refused, Judgements he would not hear of, Statutes he scorned, for said he, Gentlemen of late have found out so many tricks to couzen their creditors (I by the same means having had several collops cut from the body of my estate) that I will not credit any more. Whereas he spake this only to grind the blunt appetite of any *Commodity-taker* into a sharper edge, and make him more greedy of his own ruine, imitating in this a cunning and deceitful, though petulant and wanton Curtezan, who is nice when a sick-brained young Gallant importunes her to admit of his amorous kindness, only to make him more fierce upon his own confusion: holding him off like a fencer, a month or

two, that he may come up the roundlier to her purpose: But to the matter. My Gentleman being in a manner denyed, I seconded him thus; Sir, you know not what you do in refusing to credit this Gentleman, he is his Fathers heir, a man of a vast estate, and very aged: This his Son is about a very great match, a rich heiress, and though he hath not money for the present, yet let him have an hundred pounds worth of commodities, you need not doubt your payment, and it will do him at this present a thousand pounds worth of good. The Mercer began to hearken to this, and protested to my *Green-Goose*, that he would be glad to do any man a pleasure so as not to injure himself, that if he could but possess him with a belief that he should have his money in six months, he would freely let him have an 100 *l.* worth of what he pleased; the young Gentleman protested, and I warrented it, and the Mercer (though seemingly loath, condescended, upon this proviso still, that he should procure some man else to be bound with him as good as himself; for said he, we are all mortall and having not a lease of our lives, we may dye to morrow; where then is my 100 *l.* Signior Unthrift is once more put to his *non-plus*, but at length fell to intreat me, who would not by any means, and so we parted. He would not let me rest for two or three days together, so that at last, provided he would give me ten pound, I would; agreed, we went again to the Mercer, and entring into Bonds, we had the commodities. Having made my young Gentleman an absolute Gallant, I went to sell what was left, of which I made threescore pound, but I made my Gallant to be content-

ed

ed with 30*l.* alleging, that when goods come once to be sold, they will not yield the moiety of what they cost, though new. Thus I perswaded him to be very well satisfied. He revels about, whilst I was contriving to leave him as bare of means as braines. Now doth my Mercer dream of nothing but his pay day, which he hoped would be broken. The time being expired, and my young Novice not minding it, the Mercer invited him to dinner to *Fish-street*; dinner being almost ended, for a third course came up a couple of *Sergeants* stewed with *Mace*, who arrested him at the suit of the Founder of the Feast; Not procuring Bail, he was carried to the Counter. where he lay some time; his friend hearing thereof, endeavoured to get him out, by suing out an *Audita querela*; my Mercer hearing thereof, advised with me what was best to be done. Agree, said I with some Officer in the Exchequer, and so turn the debt over to the King, pretending you owe him so much money; for the Chancery will not, or can not allow any thing in such a case against his Majesty. He so doing his business was done for the present. Thus have I read, when Jews have bought a red haired boy, at first they will cloath him in silks, ravishing him with all the delights that can be thought on, never have Musick from his ears, or banquets from his taste; and thus use him, till they see he is plump, fat, and fit for their purpose, but when the poor boy least thinks of his immnent ruine, he is taken by a brace of slaves, and tyed up by the heels, so beaten by degrees to death with Cudgels, purging the rankest poyson out of his mouth, and making Mummie of his flesh. I shall leave it to the Reader to

make application. In ſhort, I perſwaded the Mercer to take a bond of 500 *l.* of his Priſoner to be paid after his Fathers deceaſe. This Widgeon being in the nets, ſealed to any thing for his liber y. He was not the firſt ſo ſerved by thouſands. And that is the reaſon there are ſo many creſted Citizens; for Gentlemen being beggered by their extortion, they have no other *means* than to *fall in* with their Wives, *purchaſing* from them a ſupply. This is it that makes the Roads every where ſo full of High-way-men, who will borrow of men when they have little mind to lend, but not without giving them *Bonds*. This makes *Tyburn*, the Metropolitan, and other pretty Gallowſes, have ſo many hangers on; and this is the cauſe ſo many ſuch Citizens ſons are plagued after their Fathers deaths, as their Fathers, when living, have plagued others. Theſe are the Boars that plow up whole Acres, nay Fields of Gentlemens Lands with their Snouts; theſe are the Swine that eat up whole Orchards, and theſe are they whoſe fiery conſciences drink up whole Fiſh-ponds at a draught; and laſtly, they are the *Aurricanes* that root up the trees of whole woods togeth r. From ſuch, *libera nos Domine*.

To conclude, take this as an infallible Maxime, that the worſt of Creditors are either very rich men or very poor men: The rich man can ſtay for his money, and therefore will have all or none, the poor man to be ſure will have no pitty, neither do I ſee how he ſhould, for it may be the debt is all he is worth.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLI.

How he insinuating himself into the acquaintance of all he thought he could prey upon, and what tricks he used to build his interest upon their ruine.

HOw can that *Tyrant flourish* in his *Commonwealth*, when the foundation of his reign was built on the *Sepulchre* of the right and lawful *Heir* he *murdered*? And how can that man prosper whose rise he reared from other mens ruines? Such was I, who having often times been gulled by Knaves, turned Knave my self, and did as greedily hunt after such I could make a prey of, (to repair the damages I had sustained by others,) as the Devil doth after Usurers souls, being on their deathbeds, resolving to live like a Bandite on the spoil. Like a Souldier having been beaten to the world, (or indeed more properly beaten by the world) I began to summon up all my sences, and my idle brains to a strict account, how to get that up again, my riot and folly had spent, and thinking I had no way to recover my self but by what ruined me, I did cast about me; and fished after this manner. I prepared my lines, providing baits, and made ready my hooks, which had such constant and firm barbs, that after I had struck a Gudgeon in the Gulls I was sure to hold him, though I suffered him to play a little in the stream. The *floods* I daily frequented, were either the Temple, Ordinaries, Play-houses, Cock-pits, Brothels, or Taverns, leaving no place unsearched wherein there might be any thing worthy a *bait*. If such I found,

like a ſhadow I was never from his heels, but followed him cloſe, eſpecially if he was a young Country Gentleman, whom his Father had ſent up to ſee faſhions in the City; and rather than he ſhould go out as raw as he came in, I failed not to ſeaſon him in one of the Cities powdring Tubs. Firſt, I made it my buſineſs to know what his Father allowed him, then would I ſtudy his natural diſpoſition and inclination, and accordingly ſute my ſelf to him, ſo that by my behaviour towards him, he ſhould look upon me to be his *maſculine Sweet heare*, his boſome friend, and that like *Hypocrates* twins, we muſt needs live and die together. Having now by much ſweat and induſtry adapted and fitted him to my humour and purpoſe, and wrought him to ſuch a ſoft and waxen temperature, that I could make what impreſſion I pleaſed on him, I brought him acquained with ſome of my accomplices, who all vailed bonnet to him, invited him from Tavern to Tavern; not letting him expend a penny, or if he wanted money I would ſupply him with four or five pound. This innocent (not having yet ſcented the City air) all this while thinks himſelf in *Elizium*, fancying he enjoys more delights then the *Turks Paradiſe* affords, and withal imagineth himſelf not a little graced to be entertained amongſt ſuch ſeeming gallants; for my Rogues (give me the liberty to call them ſo) lookt on it as the greateſt piece of Policy to wear good cloaths, though their pockets were worſe furniſhed than a Chandlers box, that ſeldome hath any greater money in it, then two pence, three pence, groats, *&c.* Sometimes my Cully did meet with ſuch (that knew me) who would

would advise him to have a care, and not to keep me company, for I was a dangerous person, and in the end would ruin him. Whereas it was to little purpose, for when youth in its full vigor, and height of desire, neither wholsome counsel, nor lamentable examples, will give them warning of their future destruction. Still I continued my seeming respects and kindnesses to him, which I only intended as the *Preludium* or Prologue to that Play which was to come after; for my Country *Cork-Brain* being honeyed with these sweet delights, thought that whatever he could return was not able to give an answerable satisfaction. Watching for a fit oppertunity, (when he is well warmed with wine) then would I perswade him, (which was no difficult matter) to be bound with me for so much, &c. which I promised I would repay at the day, without putting him to any inconvenience; but he knew not that what I borrowed for an hour, I borrowed for an age. When I could squeeze no more juice out of him, then I left him, to the Mercy of his creditors, to be dealt withall as the Popinjay in the Fable, who being sumoned to appear with the rest of the winged Tribe, before their King the Eagle, borrowed of all the finer sort of Birds feathers to adorn him, and make him appear splended before his *Sovereign*; after he was dismised, he proudly fluttered up and down the woods with his borrowed gallantry, which made the little Titmouse, Wren, and Hedg Sparrow adore him; they to whom he was obliged for his gallantry, hearing thereof; demanded again their own, and so deplumed him, whereby he seemed ten times worse than those

ſmall birds that lately did admire him. Such Popin-jaws are they that borrow of every Citizen to make themſelves ſhew glorious in the worlds eye, but when their Creditors ſhall come and claim their own, and get it, they will ſeem more foul then lately they did fair. So various, and villanous were the pranks I committed every day, that I was forced now like an Owl, to appear only by night in the City. If I did at any time tranſgreſs that Cuſtome, I did then as the Dogs of *Egypt* when they come to drink of the River *Nilus*; lap here and there, and dare not ſtay long in one place, for fear the Crocodiles that lie lurking within the Banks, ſhould pull them into the current, ſo did I; skulking here and there, then to one Tavern, and not daring to ſtay longer there, ſhifted to another. But to proceed.

CHAP. XLII.

How he could make Ink that would diſappear from the Paper, accordingly as he pleaſed, by the ſtrength or weakneſs of the compoſition. His imitating exactly both Hand and Seal. A remarkable Story thereupon.

READing one time a Book that an *Italian* writ, I found therein a Deſcription of ſeveral ſorts of Ink, and how to make them; but more eſpecially an Ink that ſhould laſt a Week, a Month, or two, according to the compoſition. I made an experiment, and found it hit indifferently, perceiving how beneficial this would be to me, I reſolved not to reſt till I had found out the true receipt, which I did at laſt by much ſtudy and induſtry. Having obtained it, I ſo highly valued it, that methought I ſhould not have parted with it for the *Philoſophers-Stone*. Not to be tedious, I did

did abuse therewith many persons with Bonds, Leases, Deeds, Acquittances, &c. there appearing in such a time nothing but the bare seal, the Paper remaining as white as if never writ on. By the help of graving I could counterfeit Seals exactly, insomuch that I have often cheated the *Grand Cheater Oliver*, the late Hypocritical and bloudy Tyrant: and by an exact imitation of an hand-writing, his Council was too too sensible of what Cheats I put upon them. That I was no bungler at it, I shall give you this instance. Accidentally coming acquainted with a Gentlewoman, very beautiful and well featured, her sparkling eyes set me all in a flame, so that I resolved to attempt the enjoyment of her. Often times I visited her, and by the modesty of my carriage towards her, she perceived not my burning lust. One time having a fit opportunity, she being alone, I communicated my thoughts to her, waving what amorous discourse past on my side, I would have fallen roundly to the matter; but she understanding my intent, cryed out, whereupon I desisted, seeing it was to little purpose if I proceeded. Sitting down by her, she expresst an absolute hatred to me for my incivility, and vowed she would neither see nor endure me more. The vehemence of her utterance and countenance fully declared she was in earnest, so that I saw 'twas time to be gone. Looking about (unperceived by her) I took up half a sheet of Paper of her writing, and clapt it into my pocket, and so took my leave. Coming home, I found my love converted into hatred, and therefore vowed my revenge; and thus it was I understood from her whereabout her husband lived,

liv'd, and what his christian name was, with something of her concerns, that her Husbands Mother could not indure her (because her son married hee without a portion though a wise, discreet, vertuous, and handsome woman) and whereabout she liv'd, with name, &c. I counterfeited a Letter as from this Virtuous Gentlewoman to a Gallant of hers, taxing him with want of love, and that if he proved not more constant, she had no more to say to him, &c. the contents you shall have in the Letter it self, as followeth;

Most beloved by me of men.

I Cannot blame you so much as my self: It is customary for man to proffer, but then it should be a womany duty to refuse; but alas! how could I withstand the powerful perswasions of your eloquent tongue, especially when they carried with them so much seeming reality of affections and constancy. I find you now like other vow-breaking men, who having obtained the fruition of their desires, their appetite nauseates that which before it so eagerly craved. Remember the many sweet nightly imbraces we have had, Call to mind those many endeared and melting expressions you did voluntarily utter, when I was encircled in thine arms, and if that will not reduce you to your former station, and good esteem of me, now so much slighted by you, consider that I have preferred you in love before my Husband, not caring how much I wronged him to pleasure you. If nothing will prevail, know then this shall be my resolution, that since you have alienated my affection from my husband, and you thus unworthily deserted me, I will procure a Subject elsewhere shall outdoe you in every thing, as much or more as you have out-done my Husband. I am young, plump, handsom,

and

and bucksome, what then ſhould hinder me from enjoying ſuch a perſon, my heart will not reſt ſatisfied till I have found—which having done, he ſhall lead me in thy view, and then it is probable you will deſire, but never ſhall reaſſume your place again within my breaſt.

Farewell.

This Letter was ſent to her Mother in Law in the Country, who was glad ſhe had matter to impeach her daughter to her ſon. Aſſoon as he ſaw the Letter, he very well knew the hand, he thought, and would have ſworn it to be his wifes, but reading the contents, the poor man was ready to ſink down for grief. Perturbation of mind would not let him reſt in his Country dwelling, but rid Poſt up to *London*, where he ſoon found out his Wife. The unexpected ſight of him at firſt ſurprized her, not hearing of his coming, and knowing that his occaſions were very urgent in the Country; however, like a truly loving Wife, ſhe was overjoyed to ſee him, and would have kiſt him, but that he rudely thruſt her off; which action ſtruck her to the heart, and overwhelmed her in amazement. Prethee ſweet heart (ſaid ſhe) what is the matter? There read it, ſaid he, throwing her the Letter; ſhe read it, and ſwounded, he let her lye, not caring whether ſhe lived or dyed, and had dyed indeed, had not her maid come up accidentally. Being recovered, he asked her whither it was her hand, ſhe could not deny it: which made the man rage, ready to run out of his wits, whilſt ſhe was ſilent with aſtoniſhment, taking ſuch inward grief, that ſhe betook her ſelf to her bed. Nothing could comfort her, neither would ſhe take any thing to ſuſtain life. Hearing how powerfully

my

my forgeries had wrought, to the hazard of some lives, in the same hand I sent him a Letter, wherein I gave him an account of the design, proclaiming to the world the Gentlewomans honesty, unspotted and unstained. The Gentlewoman recovered in a little time after, but this trick had too much seized upon my Gentleman, for like a fool he fell distracted in a sneering posture, as pleased to think his wife was honest *notwithstanding*. I have been somewhat long in this relation, because it was a passage very remarkable; Now I shall tell you how I cheated a young Citizen and Upholster.

CHAP XLIII.

How he cheated a young Citizen newly set up, and an Upholster.

A Young Citizen about to set up, and wanting some money, was directed to me, to procure so much as his present occasions required. I treated him very civilly, promising him very fairly, and in order thereunto appointed him a day: which being come, contrary to my expectation or desire, he brought a crue with him to see the receipt of the money. Judging this time inconvenient for my designs, I told him, I expected the mony this very day, but if he pleased to seal the Bond, and have it witnessed, he might keep it himself, and bringing the bond with him the next day he should not fail to have his money. The next day he came to the place appointed, where I was ready to wait him; as good Fortune would have it he came alone. I discoursed with him awhile, at last I desired him to see the bond, which he delivered into my hand, being signed and sealed before: I took this as a good and lawful delivery, and put it up into my pocket. He asked me what I meant? I told him he should know when the Bond became due. Why Sir, said he, you will not serve me so? Dost thou think I am such a fool (said I to) lend thee so much money upon a piece of paper, which next shower of rain will wash away with thy self into the common shore? Shall I trust thee, when thou canst not trust thy self? At this the young man began to be clamorous, but one of my accomplices soon stilled the *clapper* of his mouth by

by a ſound knock on the pate, which laid him a ſleep: and in the mean time we marched off. Juſt as the money came due upon the Bond, my flock pated Cit Was gone to tell his friends in the Country the danger of Counters and Priſons in the City. Wanting another time ſome money to ſupply my preſent occaſions, I could not think of any ſtratagem for the preſent to aſſiſt me in this neceſſity, but to ſell my feather-bed, with furniture thereunto belonging: packing them up, I got a friend to go along with the Porter, and ſell them to an Vpholſtar, which my friend did, bringing me half their worth, but withal that which was more then the whole worth the name of the Perſon. A week afterwards, wanting my bed, I reſolved to have it again; whereupon I went to him that bought it, asking him before a couple I carried along with me, whether at ſuch a time there were not ſuch commodities ſold him? he acknowledged there was. I deſired to ſee them, and he as readily ſhewed them me. Sir, ſaid I, theſe are my goods, I was lately robed, and now I know you are the receiver. I muſt have you before a Juſtice, to know how you came by them. The name of a Juſtice ſo terrified this ſimple, ſilly fellow, that he bid me take them if I would ſwear they were mine, and put him to no farther trouble. Firſt I ſwore they were my goods, (and therein I was not perjured but I told him I could not receive ſtollen goods ſafely, though they were my own. In ſhort, I got my bed and furniture thereunto again, with money to boot.

CHAP. XLIV.

He is at laſt met withal, and laid up in Priſon by one of his Creditors; the abuſes and tricks Serjeants uſe to arreſt men. Laſtly he eſcaped by putting a trick on his Keeper.

HAving gone thus far without any remarkable check or controule, at leaſt any ſuch as might bear a proportion with the villanies and injuries I had done, I abſolutely thought that nothing was diſhoneſt or difficult that had in it either pleaſure or profit. Meeting with no molleſtation or hindrance, I took my freedom to even what I liſted. One time thinking my ſelf moſt ſecure, I then found my ſelf in the greateſt danger, being arreſted in an action of five thouſand pound: ſeveral times there were attempts made to take me, but I was ſtill too cunning for them; yet at laſt they over-reacht me: It will not be amiſs to relate in what manner; They had information that every

weak

week I had Letters come to me out of *Essex*, and that the Porter which brought them had still free admittance to me, Wherefore the Serjeant provided himself a Frock, and a Rope about his middle, which would better have becomed his Neck, and with Letters in his hand directed to me, trudged to my Lodging. Knocking at my door, and being demanded his business, told them he had Letters for the master of the House, nominating me; looking out and seeing no one but a seeming Porter, I ordered that he should be let in. As soon as he was entred, he bid my worship good morrow, and instead of delivering me his Letters shewed me his *Mace*, which I wisht might be the onely spice and meat too he should eat for a twelve-moneth. Seeing how I was betrayed, I went quickly along with him to the Compter: And afterwards finding I could make no composition with my Creditors, turned my self over to the *Kings-bench*. Various are their tricks and inventions to ensnare whom they intend to arrest. Sometimes I have known a Creditor to seem to comply with his *Debtor*, telling him that paying so me inconsiderable matter, his bonds should be renewed giving him longer time, then appoint him a place of meeting, where he saith he will bring a Councellor and Scrivener; a Councellor to advise them in the management of their business, and a Scrivener to write what they shall determine; He acquainted a Serjeant and a Yeoman of his Plot, who were as hot upon the exploit as an *Italion* on a Wench of fifteen. The Serjeant going with a Barresters Gown on his back, and the Yeoman with his beard cut as close as a stubble field, with a Pen in his ear, with some Parchment in his hand, effected their design without any suspition. A Merchant I knew that intended to break and go beyond Sea, was betrayed by his Servant informing his creditors that on such a time his *Master* would be gone. That on the morrow he would send for some Coopers to hoop some dry fats, to pack his Goods, and that if ever they hoped to have their money, they must make that their time to accomplish their desires. Some Serjeants were presently acquainted herewith, who attired like Coopers in red Caps, canvase Breeches with an Adds in their hands, & hoops about their Shoulders went to the Merchant, and were entertained whilest he was giving them direction, instead of hooping the dry Fats, they *hoops* him in their armes, and arrested him.

Be-

before they parted with him they made him part with so much money as he should satisfie his Creditors & them; & was forced to see them beside, not to enter then any more actions against him. They will change themselves into as many various shapes as *Proteus* to bring about their design. Some times like a grand wealthy Citizen, other times like a Country fellow newly come to Town, booted and spurred all dirty besides. Now as I have related their manners of arresting, so let me in short inform you of their using (or more properly abusing) *Prisoners*. First they enquire of the person whether this be the first time he was arrested; if so, then they know the better how to deal with him. It may be they will carry him to the Tavern, under the pretence of doing him some kindness, where they will advise him to send for some friend, and the one offers to be the Porter himself instead of fetching him, he only enquires out where any of his Creditors live, & perswades them to make use of this happy opportunity to recover their debt: the other that is left behind doth in the mean time *make* him. Returning very sorrowful he tells him that his friend is not at home, &c. Having gotten as much as they can by spunging, and sucking the very *hearts-blood* of his Pocket: the Compter must be his refuge at last. Sometimes when they see a man in fear of arresting they will without Warrant of the Creditor give him a cast of their Office, many times arresting him before they entered their action, and have their wayes to prevent a mans injuring them by search in the Offices. Other times when they are feed they will send to the party to keep out of the way, having been fed by him for that purpose afore. Oftentimes when they have arrested, if the Creditor stand not by, they will let the person go for a brace of Angels, or so: telling his adversary that he cannot set eye on him. And though their fee for an arrest is to be but one shilling, yet will they not be wrought upon to perform their office hardly under a Crown, and though the statute saith that the arrested shall pay but one Groat, I will not excuse him for an Angel. If a man oppose them or struggle with them for an escape, they will both gripe and pinch the poor man, and afterwards clap an action of Assault & Battery on him at their own suit. I could say more of them but that out of fear I must be favourable being now as I tell you in Prison, in the *Kings-bench*: which may be called a Bankrupts Banqueting-house, where he feasts himself on

dishes

dishes borrowed from other mens Tables: or a *Prodigalls Purgatory*, and a *Bethouse* for detaying Citizens. Being weary of this place, wherein there are as many maladies and mischiefs as flew out of *Pandoraes* Box opened by *Epimetheus*; I bethought my self of this stratagem. One day I pretended much business abroad, and so got leave to go out with my Keeper, resolving not to return back with him. Having bin from Tavern to Alehouse, and so to Tavern again pretending the despatch of much business, I at length told my Keeper, that I would visit a very dear friend of mine, but that I thought it requisite to be trimmed first; he consenting we went to a Barbers; I sate down in the Chair first, and being dispatcht, I desired the Keeper to sit down too, and I would pay for the *trimming* his *Phisnomy*. All the time he was trimming I talkt of one thing or another, to hold him in discourse. At last said the Barber shut your eyes, otherwise my ball will much offend them. Shutting his eyes I took an occasion to slip out, planting my self in an house hard by, the Barber not imagining I was a Prisoner. The Keeper not hearing me talk, valued not the smart but opened his eyes, seeing me not in the Shop; he arose up, & making too much haste, overthrew *Cupboard*, throwing the Bason on him, and away ran out into the street with the Barbers Cloth about him, and *Don Barboroso's Turbant* on his head, the people seeing him in this Garb with the froth still about his face, concluded him mad, and as he ran gave him the way. The Barber with his Rayzor ran after the Keeper, crying *stop him, stop him this I may be revenged on the Rogue*. The other mere minding the out cry after him, ran staring up and down as if his wits had lately stole away from him, and he in pursuit of them. Some durst not stop him, others would not think the Barber by his posture intended to have his Testicles for abusing his Wife. To conclude, the Barber at last seized him, and having gotten his Cloths, and made him pay sixpence for shaving; the Keeper was dismist with a kick or two in the Arse; The Barber not suffering him to speak a word in his own defence. I hus freeing my self, resolved to take the Country air, where I happily met with you. Many other things worthy the remembrance did he receive, which now I have forgot. Some while we stayed together, but at last his business called him one way, and my *Padding Trade* another.

CHAP. XXVI.

He is laid up in Oxford-*Goal by his Hoſt; he is cheated at* Cheſter; *and after ſome time is ranſomed thence by ſome of his Comerades, Knights of the* Road, *they paying his Debts.*

OUr Crew having been abroad, we had got a valuable Purchaſe; which after we had divided, I told them, that I would but viſit a friend at *Oxford*, and repair to them again within two or three dayes. My old Acquaintance being overjoy'd to ſee me, after ſo long abſence, treated me very gallantly, introducing me into the ſociety of the Wits; who would frequently drink too, till they had loſt them. The Company pleaſed me ſo well, that I thought it a ſoleciſm in civility, to be ſober, when they made any appointment for mirth; and they being true *Bacchanalians*, in the upper moſt Claſſis of *Ariſtippus*'s School, ſcorn'd to be outvy'd by a junior Sophiſter; and therefore, do what I could, they would be drunk before me: They never contended about any argument that tended to ebriety, but ſwallowed them all. I thought they would never have done ſpeaking of Sack; every one endeavoring who ſhould expreſs moſt in its praiſe. One ſaid, *That Diogenes was but a dry fellow*; and the only reaſon he could give for it, was, *That it is ſhrewdly ſuſpected by*

the Commentators on his Tub, that that wooden houſe of his was given him by a Beer-brewer, who being an enemy to all good wits and learning, gave him this Cask, which formerly had contained that pernicious liquor, Leer, that by the meer ſcent he might deſtroy his underſtanding. But *Bacchus* is ſo witty a Philoſopher, that he never fails, night nor day, to pour forth his inſtructions, till he hath filled his auditors out of meaſure; 'tis he that makes us ſpeak fluently, and utter our minds in abundance: for my part, I am commonly ſo overjoy'd in his company, that I have often feared I ſhould never be my own man again. Said another, It is Sack was the *Promethean* fire, not ſtoln from *Jove*'s Kitchin, but his Wine-cellar, to increaſe the native heat, without which we are but cold clay; but that celeſtial liquor applied even to the dead, will cauſe a revivication: this is it which gave *Ganimede* beauty, and *Febe* youth. Can you think, that ever *Ariſtotle* would have been taken notice of, had he drank Ale or Beer; or, that *Alexander*'s conqueſts hadbeen heard of, had he been ſober? therefore to make his Captains famous to poſterity, he taught them how to muſter Quarts and Pottles, and by accuſtoming them to be dead-drunk, ſhewed them the way to contemn death. All this is true (ſaid another, ſo drunk, that what he ſpake could hardly be underſtood) but pray take my opinion with you too: do not all light things aſcend? what better way is there to underſtand high matters, then a light head? *Copernicus* by the lightneſs of his head, claimed alliance with heaven, and by that firſt found out the motion of the earth; which he could never have done, had not Sack been his inſtructer. Hence grew the Proverb,

verb, *In vino veritas*, as if Sack were the onely Butt truth ſhoots at, the piercing of which cauſeth the other to be drawn out with it. For my part Gentlemen, ſaid I, my paſſion was never more ſtirred then the other day, coming by a red-lettice, unto which I have a natural antipathy: there did I hear a Tapſter aver, that Helicon was nothing more then an Hogs-head of March-beer, and that *Pegaſus* was anciently a Dray-horſe: and then ſpeaking of *French* wine in deriſion, called him friſking *Monſieur*; and the *Spaniſh Don Rhodomantado*; ſwearing, that if ever he met with either, he would challenge all the Drawers in the Town to daſh him as he would. Then tumbling out two or three ſmall-beer oaths, he wiſht that he might never look through his red-lettice Percullice, if he did not verily believe he ſhould ſee *Monſieur* burn'd with a pox to him, and *Spaniſh Don* mull'd to death with butter and eggs.

It is a thing beyond my reaſon,
That we ſtrong Ale for Sack ſhould quit,
Since 'twould have blown us up by treaſon,
Had not Ale beſtirr'd our wit:
Then give us Ale, but baniſh Sack;
That Spaniſh Don *muſt have the rack.*

I could do no leſs for his malepertneſs, but broach his Hogs-head, which to convince him of his error, ran Terſe Claret: I heard afterwards, this accident converted the Infidel. We ſpun out various diſcourſes of this nature, as long as we could ſee, and then each man reel'd home to his reſpective lodging. The next morning, walking abroad to find out ſome of

my laſt nights aſſociates, unfortunately my *Cheſter*-Landlord (who having ſome buſineſs to do in *Oxford*, was newly come thither to diſpatch it) eſpy'd me, and without accoſting me (like a ſubtile Sophiſter) watcht me whither I went: being houſed, he preſently fetcht two Officers, and coming out into the ſtreet napt me. I ſent to thoſe friends that had been ſo merry with me ever ſince my coming to that City; but they underſtanding the buſineſs, came not near me; one pretending indiſpoſition of body; another, that he was not within; a third, that he was about urgent occaſions, which having finiſht, he would wait upon me; but in fine, none came to my relief, ſhewing themſelves right pot-companions, whoſe courteſies it may be, ſhall extend to the payment of a Reckoning, when their friend wants money to diſcharge it himſelf; but diſappear and vaniſh, when their aſſiſtance is implored to draw him out of Priſon. Seeing no remedy, I patiently ſuffered my ſelf to be confined. My adverſary viſiting me, I treated with him about my releaſment, offering him what I had, which was near upon half; but his reſolution was to have all, or there I muſt lye. Though I could not much condemn him, yet I could not but complain againſt the inconſtancy of Fortune; and ruminating within my minde the miſeries that attend all ſorts of priſons, I judged that of Debt to be the moſt deplorable: and though I wanted liberty, which commonly doth depreſs the minde, yet by the vertue of Canary (which I could not be without) my fancy ſcorned to be fettered, but would in ſpight of fate, uſe her freedom. 'Tis ſome kinde of pleaſure and comfort, for a man ſometimes in adverſity, to deſcant on his own mi-

miserable condition; which because I found experimentally true, I applied my self to my usual custom, the use of my pen, differencing these Metropolitan Prisons thus:

To Bedlam *men are sent bereft of wit;*
When 'tis restored, then they are freed from it:
Confin'd to Newgate *long, men can't complain,*
For once a month they're cleer'd from it and pain;
In a short time their Bolts wear off, and then
They may be sure ne're to come there agen;
Discharged thence their fettered souls shall be,
Only an hour confin'd, and then set free.
Bridewel, *no wise man yet did e're dispraise thee,*
For thou dost feed the poor, correct the lazie;
The expiration of a little time,
Forgives offenders, and forgets their Crime:
Hereafter from this Prison, Heav'n defend me,
Rather to Bedlam, Newgate, Bridewel, *send me;*
For there Wit, Work, or Law doth set men free,
Nothing but Money here gets liberty.

Having lain here above a week, I sent away a Letter to my brethren, informing them of my misfortune, and acquainting them with the sum I was imprisoned for; which was sent me by them, and brought by one of our trusty Knights: paying my Debt and Fees, I returned again to them.

CHAP. XXVII.

He returns to his Brethren the Knights of the Road, *whom he finds with two or three Gentlemen, ſtrangers; he cheats one of them of a very fair and rich Watch.*

MY Companions took little notice of me at my return, which made me think there was ſome deſign in hand; but according to their uſual courſe fell to drink high: obſerving two or three ſtrange faces, I tipt a wink to one of my Brethren; being in another room, I asked him, who they were; he replied, Gentlemen that were travelling into the *North*; to which he added, We have been pumping them (ever ſince we did thruſt our ſelves into their company) to know what ſtore of Caſh they had about them; but we find little more then will defray their neceſſary expences on the Road; only, ſaid he, there is one of them hath a very rich Watch: I bid him return to his place, and I would warrant him to have it before he ſtirred. I came in again to the company, not taking the leaſt cognizance of any, but ſhewed much reſpect and civility to them all, as a ſtranger; I purpoſely askt what it was a clock: one of the Gentlemen, and of my friends both, pulled forth their Watches, ſtriving who ſhould firſt give me ſatisfaction to my queſtion; after this, they viewed interchangeably the workmanſhip of one and the other, both praiſing the ſeeming goodneſs of each others Watch. At laſt my friend makes a propoſi-

tion:

tion: Come, Sir, if you pleaſe we will make an exchange upon ſentence and repentance. The ſtranger deſired to underſtand his meaning: Why, Sir, ſaid he, we will commit them both into the hands of any one indifferent perſon, and what difference he ſhall judge there is between them, ſhall be given in money by him whoſe Watch is leaſt worth. It was concluded upon; but they could not agree into whoſe hands to put them. At laſt it was mutually agreed upon between them, that I being a ſtranger to them both, ſhould be the decider: I ſeemingly refuſed it, but they would not hear me alledge any arguments to the contrary; whereupon I went out, and immediately cauſing my horſe be brought forth, without the leaſt delay I mounted, and away I rid. My Comerades knew where to meet with me at the next ſtage. The next morning they found me out, telling me how they all ſtormed to be ſo cheated, to avoid ſuſpition: and now did they all imbrace me, promiſing to themſelves great hopes in me from this adventure.

CHAP. XXVIII.

He puts a notable Trick upon a Phyſician.

NEar adjacent to our general rendezvous, I was informed of the habitation of a wealthy Phyſician, who had ſhewed himſelf fortunately expert in divers Cures, where it ſeemed that humane art had not ſufficient power to give a remedy: The fame of his great Skill, and of many admirable Cures, which to the ſhame of other Phyſicians, he had performed, made him ſo generally beloved and ſought after, that in a ſhort time he purchaſed, by his ſanatory induſtry, above 500 l. *per annum*, and ſeldom had leſs by him than a thouſand pound. Thus much I caſually underſtood from one accidentally, ſpeaking of this his rich Neighbour: but that which pleaſed me moſt was, that (as he ſaid) he ſeldom carried leſs than an 100 pieces of gold about him conſtantly, proceeding from a fancy derived from an extream love he bore that Metal. I could not ſleep for contriving a way how I might diſembogue this Urinal of what it contained: ſometimes I way-laid him in his return; but he was ſo well eſteemed of, that he ſeldom returned home without two or three Gentlemen to accompany him. At another time I thought to have pretended ſome diſtemper, and ſo have applied my ſelf to him for Cure, and imagining that he would privately diſcourſe with me about my Malady, that then I would preſent a Piſtol to his breaſt, ſwearing, that ſhould be his immediate and unavoidable Executioner, if he did not without the leaſt noiſe or reſiſtance, deliver ſuch a quantity of Gold; but this way I could

could not approve of, it being accompanied with ſo much hazard. At laſt I thought of this ſtratagem, which ſafely produced its effect: One day after dinner I rid to his houſe (ſeemingly) in extream haſte, which he might perceive, not only by my own affrighted looks, but by my horſe, which was all of a foam; I askt his ſervant, with much quickneſs, whether Mr. Doctor was within; yes, Sir, (ſaid he) if you pleaſe to walk in, I ſhall call him to you. I waited ſome time (for moſt of that profeſſion muſt take ſome ſtate upon them) and then Mr. Doctor came. Sir, (ſaid I) the report of your great experience in your happy Practice hath brought me hither, humbly imploring your aſſiſtance, and that inſtantly, if you have any reſpect to the preſervation of life; the trouble I ſhall put you to, ſhal be gratefully recompenſed to the utmoſt of my ability. The Doctor inquired of me, whom it was, and what manner of diſtemper the perſon laboured under; I readily told him, it was my Wife, who for ſome continuance of time, hath been extreamly troubled with the Flux of her belly; the more that is applied to it by us, the more it increaſeth; wherefore, our help failing, I beſeech you lend us yours, and favour me ſo far as to ride with me to her. The ſeeming ſincerity of my words prevailed upon him, as they would have done upon the moſt diſtruſtful. This Doctor (who as I was informed, was accuſtomed to be indued more by gain, then fair words) gave me this deſirable anſwer: Sir, far be it from me that I ſhould refuſe to do my indeavor to any perſon what ever, much leſs to a Gentleman of your rank & quality, in that little skil which I have in the knowledge & practice of Phyſick; if I can effect any

thing

thing for the good of the good Gentlewoman your Wife, I will attend you thither with a very good will, which at any time my charge requireth. Without entertaining any further diſcourſe, his horſe was made ready, and ſo we rid away together. As we rid through a ſmall Wood, leading him the way I turned my horſe about, and clapt a Piſtol to his breaſt, ſhewing him withal an empty bag: See here, Sir, (ſaid I) my Wife, which hath a long time bin troubled with a flux or vomiting, which you pleaſe, the laſt I think more proper; for ſhe no ſooner receives any thing for her (and my) ſuſtenance, but ſhe immediately brings it up again at her mouth. Now, Sir, if you do not find out ſome meaus to mitigate this diſtemper (the cure I ſhall never expect, as knowing it impoſſible) this Piſtol ſhall ſend you to *Æſculapius*, to conſult with him what is moſt fit to be adminiſtred: come, Sir, let me adviſe you, and ſave your ſelf the trouble of ſo long a journey; your gold (an hundred pieces (as I am told) are the conſtant attending Eſquires of your body) I ſay, that is the beſt and only *Recipe* for a remedy. The Doctor perceiving there was no help, in much amazement and fear delivered me what gold he had about him, which was near upon the ſum expreſt: there was a rich Diamond-Ring on his finger, which I deſired him likewiſe to give me, which ſhould ſerve for a perpetual *memorandum* of his kindneſs to me. I commanded him, as he tendred his life, to ride back again, without ſo much as once looking behinde him; and that if he offered to raiſe the Country, if I was ſure to die that inſtant, I would be the death of him firſt. The Doctor followed my dictations ſo exactly, that I never heard more of him.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXIX.

He falls in love with a wealthy Widow, who is poetically inclined; he courts her, and in a short time injoys her, and after that ingratefully leaves her, carrying away what ready money she had.

HAving gained so much money by mine own industry and sole procurement, I resolved neither to acquaint my Brethren therewith, nor associate my self any longer with them, being so encouraged by this success, that I concluded I might atchieve gallant things by my self: being belated one night, and some miles from any Town, I knockt at an house that stood in my road, imagining it at first a publick house for entertainment; one of the servants coming to the door, I found it no such thing: he demanded my business: Prithee sweet heart (said I) acquaint your Master, that there is a Gentleman requests the civility of a nights lodging: she goes in, and informs her Mistress what I said, who came to me with much respect, telling me, She questioned not but that I was a Gentleman, & therefore should be welcome to the mean accommodation she was capable of shewing. I rendred her many thanks, and so alighted; strict order was given to the Groom, that he very carefully lookt after my horse: this being done, I was conducted into a very stately room; there did I make my apology in the best Rhetorick I had, for I perceived she was endued with ingenuity, by the quaintness of her expressions, *Ex pede Herculem*: Many things I forged,

forged, as that the ways being dangerous, I was fearful to adventure any farther, withal having a great charge upon me. Such was her urbanity, that laying aſide all niceties, ſhe bore me company till it was time to go to bed, entertaining me all this while with what the houſe afforded, which was beyond my expectation. Every glaſs of wine, or bit, almoſt, that I committed to my mouth, ſhe uſhered thither with ſome Apophthegm or other: the whole ſeries, indeed, of her diſcourſe, was compoſed of nothing but reaſon or wit, which made me admire her; which ſhe eaſily underſtood, I perceived, by her ſmiles, when ſhe obſerved me gaping, as it were, when ſhe ſpoke, as if I would have eaten up her words. As her ſoul was beautiful, ſparkling with celeſtial ornaments, ſo was the caskanet that contained it very fair, and enricht with natures chiefeſt gifts: She was very clear skin'd, well bodied, a ſharp piercing eye, a proportionable face, an exceeding ſmall and white hand; and then ſhe liſpt a little, which became her ſo well, that methought it added a grace to the reſt of her internal and external qualifications. Being about ten a clock, ſhe adviſed me to repoſe my ſelf, ſuppoſing I was weary; I condeſcended, though with much regret to leave her ſo ſoon; but good manners would not permit me to do otherwiſe: She conducted me to my Chamber, where bidding me good night, ſhe betook her ſelf to her own Chamber. That night I could hardly ſleep, not ſo much for pure love, as the heat of luſt: next morning, very early, I heard her ſtirring, which made me wonder; but ſhe told me afterwards, that ſhe got up ſo ſoon, fearing I ſhould have gone away, and ſhe not take her leave of me.

About

About eight in the morning, the Maid brought me up a Sack-posset; & a little while after, her Mistriss came, courteously saluting me, and enquiring how I slept: I return'd her an answer, in as handsom terms I could utter: her eyes plainly discovered to mine, that she had more then a common respect for me. Having left me a while, I arose & made my self ready for my journey: after several discourses which she had ingaged me in, purposely to delay time, with much gratitude I took my leave, she attending me to the court: my horse being brought out, halted down-right (she had caused him to be prickt in the foot, to the intent I might stay longer.) Not knowing what to say or do, Well, Sir, said she, since the unhappy accident hath fallen out so unexpectedly, make use of my house, & what is in it, till your horse be recover'd of his lameness. This was a propositon that my soul longed for; wherefore I could not but shew much satisfaction in the acceptation of this proffer. We walkt in again, and prosecuted, for diversion sake, our former discourse, interlining it with some love-touches at a distance, which she would frequently descant on pleasantly. We in this short time became intimately acquainted; which need not be much wondred at, considering the greatness of sympathy between us; so that now the conquest of her appeared not any ways difficult. Having talkt our selves weary, Come, said she in a very familiar manner, I will shew you the product of some idle hours; and with that, brought me several Epitaphs, Elegies, Anagrams, Anacrosticks Epigrams, &c. of her own composition, too many here to relate; but for their wit, deserved to have each line characterized in gold: some I would here

insert,

inſert, were not the radiant luſtre of her conceits ſo great and glorious, that they would abſolutely extinguiſh the dim-ſightedneſs of my fancy. Having viewed them, I could not but applaud them, as their due merit; and I was glad I had this happy occaſion to vent my own thoughts, which I tacitly inſinuated in theſe lines, reflecting on her from what I had read

Siſters thrice three I've read of, and no more,
Till your quick wit compleated half a Score:
Since you are one, let me perſwade you then,
Be kind to me, for they are kind to men.
Deareſt be like them, they are ſoft and blithe,
Let who will love the nine, give me the tithe.

Theſe lines ſo powerfully wrought upon her, that ſhe could not forbear to tell me, that ſhe was much obliged to me for what I had writ. You cannot Madam, ſaid I, cancel your obligation, till you have made ſome recompence: with that, ſaid ſhe ſmilingly, What will content you? The continuance of your favour Madam, is the utmoſt ambition of my deſires. You have it Sir; neither can I deny any deſerving man a thing ſo inconſiderable; By your favour Madam, love I mean. I never was ſo uncharitable, ſaid ſhe, to be out of love with any. I was glad to hear her reply ſo merrily: for a fort which ſo capitulateth is half ſurrendred. Since I had broke the ice, I was reſolved to proſecute my deſign, wherefore in plain Engliſh I told her, that I loved her from the firſt interview, ſo ardently, that my conſtancy ſhould prove the reality of my affection: ſhe deſired me to leave that to the teſt of time; that ſhould ſhe

believe

believe me ſuddainly before ſhe had made tryal, ſhe ſhould not only loſe the good eſtimation ſhe had gained by the prudent and diſcreet management of her affairs, every one accuſing her for too much credulity, but thereby it may be involve her ſelf in a Labyrinth of all manner of troubles. Tryal, ſaid I, you ſhall have: and knowing the manner of courting a widow, *I* made no more ado but ſlipt my breeches, & before ſhe knew juſtly what *I* was about to do, *I* was between her legs, & having ſeis'd her ſally-port, *I* entred and took the gulf: *I* did this with ſuch ſpeed, that ſhe had not time to make any reſiſtance; and *I* charm'd her tongue from making any outcry, by putting her into an extaſie of ſenſe-raviſhing delectation Parleys operate little on a widow, there is nothing ſooner gains a conqueſt, then a ſtorm, or a reſolute aſſault. This action made her ſo firmly mine, that I durſt not ſpeak of leaving; which when I did at any time, her Soul was ready to leave its ancient habitation to attend on me. Some two months we ſpent in all manner of ſelf-pleaſing delights, til at laſt I begun to be tyr'd with her too too frequent invitations to venereal ſports: the more I endeavoured to ſatisfie her, the more inſatiate ſhe was. Not only by her, but by others, this experiment I found, that the oftner I treated them with a venereall banquet, the more eagerly and earneſtly they deſired it. Being now incapacitated to hold out in this manner longer, I thought it high time to be gone, but not without ſufficient reccompence for my ſervice. She daily ſollicited me to marry her, which I promiſed her from time to time, waiting an opportunity when I might become maſter of her treaſure. One day in a frolick, and the more to encourage me to make a

ſpeedy

speedy consummation of our loves by marriage, she shew'd me all her writings which concerned her estate (by which I found her to be so wealthy a fortune; that I oftentimes curst my unhappy stars, that they had thus debarr'd me from the complement of so great a bliss.) After this, she shews me a trunck wherein was contained her cash: then taking me about the neck with such fervency of affection, that I thought she would have strangled me, and with the repetition of kisses, she smiling, askt me whether these things satisfied me or not. I told her they did, but they were not to come in competition with her most affected self: with that she gave me the keys of that trunck wherein her mony was; and in retaliation, I vowed to marry her in four days. In the mean time I studied how I might be gone, but could not contrive a way, she not induring me to be of her sight. In fine, I feigned some indisposition of body, and that I would ride two or three miles for the benefit of the fresh air, and return: with much unwillingness she consented. Just as I was about to take horse (having furnished my self with as much mony as I could well carry without discovery) she wept bitterly (as having I think a prophetick Spirit.) I ask'd her the cause of her discontent: all bathed in tears, she answered me with a deep sigh, (like a Presbyterian at a long Lecture) I shall never see you more: Hard-hearted man! can you thus leave a woman that loves you thus dearly, nay that dotes on you? I made many protestations to the contrary; which were not believed. Seeing that I could not prevail on her belief, I bad her farewell, setting spurs to my horse, and was out of sight in an instant. I could not but condemn my self extreamly

ly for this inhumane action: but considering that there is no slavery greater than that of the smock, I soothed my self up in mine own unworthiness; passing by a little Ale-house, I called in, and over a pot of Ale I composed these ensuing lines, which I sent to her by a messenger I procured in the house, directed thus:

Deliver these to the fair hands of Mrs. Pulcheria Tickleman, *at her dwelling-house, near* Redding.

The Contents were these, or to this purpose

Madam,

A Poetess you are, and Prophet too,
Thus to divine I'me gone from you
Eternally. 'Tis true: D'ye think that I can eat,
Though ne're so choice, always one sort of meat?
No faith; I'd rather wear a Porters frock,
Than to be shrowded in one woman's smock.
You say you are with child; Fie, don't complain,
'Tis but the product of your fruitful brain:
Y'are only big with fancy, which may prove
A witty Brat, like Pallas spring from Jove.
And have you then consented? How can I chuse,
But write encomiums on my fertile Muse?
Mind not the Father, nor his Issue, for it
Will like the Father (no doubt) by wit:
Let Plautus be your Patron, the crew
Of the nine Muses, &c.; so adieu.

I desired no answer, therefore stayed not till the return of the messenger, but rid that night to *Maidenhead*.

CHAP. XXX.

He comes up to London, *sends to a particular friend, whom he could confide in, to come to him, and requests him to compound with his Creditors, which he did in a short time; and in a short time after, he attempts the robbing of an house, but is taken and clapt up in* Newgate: *The miseries of an imprisoned estate, with the manner of his escape out of that Prison.*

THe next day I rode towards *London*, and about twylight took up my quarters in the Suburbs: The day following, I sent for a friend whom I could put confidence in, who came immediately upon the reception of my Letter. I communicated to him my intentions, who was very glad to hear of my resolution; yet I would not acquaint him how strong I was, nor by what means procured: 'twas enough that I gave him commission how far forth he should proceed, and no farther, which was half a crown *per* pound. He went (after I had given him a list of them all) to every one particularly, and treated with them so cunningly, and they despairing of ever recovering a farthing, condescended to his proposals; whereupon he gets them all to subscribe, and then brings the paper to me, which I exceedingly well liked of. According to the day appointed, he carried them the Money, which every one received proportionably, each Man respectively giving me his general release from the beginning of the world: they to whom I had confest

Judge-

Judgements, filled according to Law their discharges. But when my Creditors a little while afterward, saw me walk the streets in so splendid a garb, some of them were ready to die with anguish; but that which troubled them most, was my supercilious looks when I met any of them, and my slighting salutations. What I did in this respect, was only to have the freedom of walking the streets, without the molestation of chargeable arrests. *I* kept such deboist company, that the remaining part of my Money grew low, and in a very short time after was all spent. All my drunken companions failed me, and *I* having nothing left me but my cloaths, necessity made me condescend to the enquiry after the kind-natured Gentlewoman, my Wife: Her neareſt relations could not give me any account of her, giving her over for lost, *I* wandred up and down, imploying all the powers of my wit and invention, in the search of what might conduce to supply my present necessities. While *I* was thus hammering out some new design on the Anvil of experience, I bethought my self where probably I might find my Wife: First, I went to *Ratcliff* highway, and made enquiry of *Dammaris*, &c. the Metropolitan Bawd of those parts, for a Gentlewoman of such a complexion, stature, and age, (twas but a folly to mention her name; for those that follow that trade, change their names as often as they do their places of abode) but that cart-load of flesh could give me no information, neither was it possible for me to have staid to hear it, she so stunk of strong-waters, stronger then that Cask that never contained any thing else: I went down all along to the cross, in my way I saw many whores standing at their doors, giving me

invitation; but being poor, they could not afford the charge of *Fucus*, ſo that their faces lookt much like a piece of rumpled parchment, and by their continual traffick with Seamens breeches, I could not come near them, they ſmelt ſo ſtrongly on Tarpawlin and ſtinking Cod; yet ſtill no tidings of her I ſought for. From hence I went to *Fleet-yard*, but there they were ſo dawbed or plaiſtred with paint, and botcht with patches, that had I ſeen her there, it was impoſſible for me to have known her. Away I went to *Luteners*-lane, *Sodom*, and *Dog* and *Bitch*-yard; but the Pox, it ſeemed, had not yet fitted her for thoſe places. From hence I went to *Whetſtone*-Park, where I ſaw my Mad-dame ſtanding at the door: her frequent trading, and thoſe many ſhots ſhe had received between wind and water in the ſervice, had ſo altered her countenance, and diſproportioned her body, that I knew not whether this Frigat was Engliſh or Flemiſh built: but at laſt, hailing whence ſhe was, I boarded her, and made her lawful prize: miſtake me not, I rummag'd not in her Hold, fearing ſhe was a Fire-ſhip. The ſight and knowledge of me, made her ſhed ſome Babyloniſh tears, which I took little notice of, knowing them to be either cuſtomary to that ſex, or the effects of a moiſt brain. In we went together, where we had according to the cuſtom of the houſe, pint black-pots of ſmall Ale for two pence, and quarterns of ſtrong water, half filled, for ſix pence, with biskets; which as ſoon as brought, every one broken, though not a bit afterwards eaten. We muſt be ſmoaking too, though the pipe muſt be thrown down careleſly, and often broken as ſoon as put to the lips: One of the Plyers being

being gone down to draw some more drink, she begged me to conceal my self for the present, and comply also with the cheating customs of the house, and she would willingly pay all. I had hardly smoakt two whiffs more, but that a fellow came, where we were, swearing dam-me, why do you stay with this fellow, and leave me thus, you unconstant Quean? have spent my estate on you, and must you now grow weary of me? and with that, drew his knife, making a proffer to cut her nose off. I was so amazed at what I heard, and so irritated by passion, that I knew not which of them to be revenged on first. Sir, said I, I have been longer acquainted with her then you, and may justly claim a better title and more priviledge; but as you have affronted me, so I shall require satisfaction instantly, nor referring our difference to be decided by the field, an Umpire that Cowards frequently make choice of: so drawing my knife also, and seizing on his nose, which I intended to have divorc'd from his face, I was prevented, for it dropt off into my hand. This accident so astonisht me, and withall being much affrighted at the sight of his deaths-head, I durst not meddle with him any further, lest handling any Member, it would have dropt off in the same manner: he made a blow at me, but instead of striking me, I expected when his fist would have flown from his body into my face: he kickt at me, but that leg being up, the other was incapable of supporting his body, and so he fell down. The old Bawd hearing this disturbance, ran to us as fast as the vast bulk of her body would give her leave, whose pace was not much swifter then a snail in his full carreer, who having fasted too long, by the constant re-

percuſſion of the Sun-beams on him in a Miſling morning, forrageth a garden for pillage. From the place whence ſhe ſtarted, to that where we ſcuffled, was about ſix yards diſtance; and from the time of her ſetting forward, to the time ſhe came to us (not to belye the woman) was about half an hour, and then too, out of breath, for the haſte ſhe made. Sirrah, ſirrah, ſaid ſhe, come you hither to breed quarrels, and abuſe civil Gentlemen, and it may be, build a ſconce too? get you out of my houſe, you Raſcal, or I'll ſcald you out. By this time the Pimp came to their aſſiſtance, and ſo they all conjoyn'd to ſhove this poor fellow out of doors: and notwithſtanding he had for two or three years frequented the houſe, yet they neither pitied nor relieved him as a maimed ſouldier, the marks whereof were a ſufficient teſtimony, beſides the loſs of a Member or two. Having diſcharged my reckoning, my Wife appointed me a place where I ſhould meet her. Having now conveniency and privacy of diſcourſe, we wav'd every thing that tended not to my preſent deſign, which was the contrivance of ſome way to live. At laſt we reſolved to take an houſe, and live together; I thought it was as good to be Pimp to my own Wife, by which means the major part of the gain would be mine, as Pimp to another for twelve pence a day and ſpunging. What we had determined, we ſoon put in execution: what Money ſhe had, was laid out in utenſils belonging to our trade, as for bedding, linnen, chairs and ſtools, &c. The Tally-man, or Broker, who ſells his goods to be paid by 12 *d.* a pound *per* week, the truth of it is, we found of him, but more eſpecially his ſervants, excellent cuſtomers; for they would

for

for a private favour, cut off a score, sometimes two or three, from the Tally. Our stock being but small, my Wife was forced to be both Bawd and Whore; but our trade increasing, she goes frequently to the Carriers, where at last she had pickt up a couple of very well-featured Country-girles, and brings them home, entertaining them as servants, but shewing as much kindness in them, as if they had been our nearest kindred, purposely to induce them to stay: The Whore, my Wife, intended to have sold their Maidenheads at a dear rate; but in truth, I ever lov'd such things too well to put them to sale, having them in my possession. To be sure thereof, I gathered my Rose-buds the first night, lest the infectious and contagious breath of some one *Suburbicarian* should blast them: in four dayes time afterwards, I fitted them for their occupation, leaving the instructive part thereof to my Wife to season them withall. I never saw two young Jades understand their trade sooner in my life; for in a Months time they could Cant indifferently, Wheedle most cunningly, Lye confoundedly, Swear desperately, pick a Pocket dexterioully, Dissemble undiscernably, drink and smoak everlastingly, Whore insatiately, and brazen out all their actions impudently. Now did I begin to renew my acquaintance with the tribe of Rogues, with whom I grew so intimate, that I was seldom out of their company, either at home or abroad. To relate all the tricks and rogueries we committed in one half year, were an half years work: therefore to be short, we were grown so notorious, and so generally taken notice of, that at last my Wife, and her two Maids of dishonour, were apprehended by the Marshals men,

and carried to *Bridewel*; I my ſelf narrowly eſcapt by flight: the next day I boldly went to viſit them; methought their beating of hemp became them excellent well; and in troth I'le ſay this for them, there hath not been ſeen in that place a more ſerviceable ſtrong-dockt Crew for many years. Looking very earneſtly upon that Hemp my Wife was beating, a deep fit of Melancholly ſeized me, proceeding onely from my imagination; for I fancied that very Hemp would make that very Rope which ſhould put a period to my life. The time of my viſiting them, fell out on the day of their correction; underſtanding ſo much, I reſolved to ſtay and ſee them well laſht I hop'd: My Wife being manacled, and the whip ready to encircle her waſte, Hold, ſaid I, and then directing my ſelf to the Maſters of *Bridewel*; May it pleaſe your Worſhips, this woman now under correction, is the moſt impudent brazen-fac'd Whore in the whole Town; I have known her a long time, ever ſince, and ſome ſmall time before ſhe undid her Husband, a very honeſt man indeed, and had the good report of all his neighbors; but this confident Slut could not then be content without her Stallion, whom ſhe maintained by what ſhe purloin'd from her Husband, and ſo utterly ruined him: ſince ſhe hath been the deſtruction of ſeveral, ſome in their eſtates, others in their bodily health, and now ſo far from being penitent, that ſhe glories in nothing more, then in the relation of how many ſhe hath undone here and hereafter: wherefore I beſeech your Worſhips, for my friend's ſake, that good honeſt man, and for the good of her own ſoul, add one ha'f-dozen ſtripes to the number intended, and let them be laid home. I had no

ſooner

ſooner ended my ſpeech, but I vaniſht immediately. Juſt as I was out of the gate, I met with two of my roguing friends, whom the Devil had ſent, I think, to way-lay me: they were going, it ſeems, to ſee ſome of their Doxies, that had that day been committed. Being over joy'd to meet me ſo accidentally, they would needs have me go to the Tavern with them: over a glaſs of wine we conſulted about divers matters, no goodneſs to be ſure; the reſult whereof was, that I ſhould go to ſuch an houſe, and try if by any means I could get into it unperceived, and abſcond my ſelf in order to my opening the door of them about twelve a clock. According to the time nominated I went, and with much facility conveyed my ſelf into a lower room, wherein there was a bed, under which I crept, being confident I might lie there ſecurely, till all the houſhold were retired to take their reſt: After I had lain about ſome two hours on the ground, there came into this room a ſervant; I peept out, and by the light of his candle, ſaw that which I thought would have diſtracted me with fear; it was, the laying the cloth, by which I underſtood, the Maſter of the houſe intended to ſup there: ſuddenly after, meat was brought in, and ſerved to the table; then came five or ſix perſons, who paſſing divers complements (all which needleſs ceremonies at that time, I wiſht, with their inventers, were ſtark naked upon the top of the ſnowy Alpes) every one took their ſeats. Had not there been at that time ſome ſmall prattling children running up and down, and making a noiſe, the affright their appearance had put me in, would have betrayed me; for my knees knockt ſo hard one againſt the other, that they made a noiſe like

like a Mill-clack, or the ſtriking of two marrow-bones together: for my life I could not prevent the Palſie from ſeizing every limb of me. My cruel fates had ſo ordered it, that there was a ſmall Dog in the room, and a Cat, both dearly beloved by their Miſtriſs, who would be continually flinging down ſomething or other, which they continually quarrelled about, as jealous and envious upon the diſtribution of their Miſtriſs favours: at length ſhe threw down a ſmall bit; the Cat being ſomewhat a more nimble ſervitor, and diligent waiter than the Dog, took it, and ran with it underneath the Bed; the Dog ran after the Cat ſnarling, endeavouring to affright her, that ſhe might forſake the purchaſe: The Dog approaching near, and too much intrenching upon her right, ſhe puts him in minde of his duty, by one ſcratch with her Claw, and chaſtiſeth him for his raſhneſs with two or three more: this ſo angred him, that he made a furious aſſault upon Puſs, who defended her ſelf as well as ſhe could; but at length they cloſed, and grappling each other, they made a moſt hideous noiſe. The ſpot in which they fought this combat, was underneath the Bed upon my buttocks: the ſervant that attended being over-haſty to quell the noiſe, by parting the fray, ſnatcheth up the fire-ſhovel, and throws it underneath the bed; had it hit my noſe with the edge, as it did my breech with the handle, I ſhould have had it pared off even with my face. The Cat inſtantly provides for her ſafety by flight, but the Dog ſtill remained behinde grumbling, and now and then barking with ſuch eagerneſs, that he became very offenſive to the whole company. Wherefore the ſervant was commanded to drag him forth,

which

which he did, beating him, and throwing him out of doors: in the mean time I was left in such a condition as if I had been breathing my last. As soon as the door was open'd, the dog came in underneath the bed with more fury than before: this second alarm did my business (or as they vulgarly say, made me do my business) for running fiercely on me, he had bit me by the nose, but that I snatch't away my head from him: but not observing the Bed-post behinde, I thought I had dashed my brains out against it; fear also having bereft me of my retentive faculty, I did let flie at one and the same time, which made so strange a noise together, that they all rose from the table to see what was the matter: their noses quickly informed them of some part, for the room was presently strongly scented; looking underneath the bed, they could see poor *Jain Perus* giving up the Ghost (as dying persons usually evacuate their ordure before their departure) they pulled me forth, and quickly revived me, they rough handling me, and then beat me, till I was e'ne dead again. Being taken in the present offence, I could expect no other but to be subject to the rigour of their vengeance; I could make no plea sufficient to stay their fury, or satisfie their revenge: having fetcht a Constable, I was carried before a Justice of Peace, who with little examination caused my *Mittimus* to be drawn, and so I was sent to *Newgate*. I was no sooner within, and under lock and key, but fetters confined my legs from straging, and bracelets were clapt upon my arms. The Rogues came all flocking about me for their Garnish, which I gave them: some of the gentiler sort added more to it, so that we had abundance of drink. But never did I hear so confused

a din

a din of Dam-me, and Sink me: others singing so loud (*alias* roaring) that I thought my self in *hell*, and that these were damned soules that roared through extreamity of torments. I thought none had been so wicked as my self, till I came among these *Hell-hounds*. Not a word came from any of their mouthes, but what was seconded with an oath, cursing their bad stars, and banning even God and his Angels. The Misery of this or any other prison is sufficiently represented, if by nothing else then want of liberty, that rich inheritance of living souls: as it is the greatest of injoyments, next that imperial Gem of health, so the want thereof next to sickness must needs be of all other the most bitter. Since then to be confined to the confines of the Goal, is to be in part unman'd, entomb'd alive, what and how great is that wretchedness that is occasioned not only by a want of liberty, but by a continual dread of shameful death! The terror of this place full of torture is so exasperated by the imagination of a noble mind, that hell it self cannot contain more exquisite woes and pains, a continuance whereof were sufficient to punish all offences, if the Law dispenced with that debt due to Justice, the life of the offender. Your companions are none but licentious wretches, souls which daily surround you with their loathsome persons overspread with scabs and lice. Here sighing is our air, our comfort coldness, our food despair, our musick ratling of chains, our recreation the destruction of vermin, lastly, our expectation death and damnation. The keeper with the grim aspect of his stern countenance, makes us tremble, with fear of a new martyrdom, whilst the insulting raskal on the tiptoes

of

of his pride need not skrew his ill-favoured face to a frown, for he knows not how to look otherwise; which so dejects the spirits of we poore imprisoned slaves, that the contrition of our lookes seems to implore his smiles, whose flinty heart having renounced remorse, casts a defiance in our sad and pitious faces. I might insist much further, but that *I* am hastning to get out of the miserable and soul-excruciating prison. One day, after *I* had exonerated nature, *I* chanced to view the seat, and found that it was no difficult matter to go down the vault by the help of a rope. A trusty friend coming to see me, *I* told him what *I* had observed, and what *I* wanted: some three dayes before the Sessions, he brought me rope enough to have hanged us all. Having a respect unto two more which I honoured for their admirable good parts, *I* informed them of what *I* intended; which presently we put in execution. First *I* went down, but *I* could have wished my self up again; for *I* was up to the neck, and knew not but that *I* might be deeper, but to my great comfort *I* found to the contrarry: the rest descended after me, with the like good success. Having gotten us to an house in which we could put confidence, we quickly freed our selves from our iron tackle.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXI

He and his two comrades (which he had delivered) disguise themselves, and having been old experienced Gamesters, they taught him all the tricks on Cards, by which they usually cheated their Cullies or Mouths, and also how to nap, palm, or top a Dy; With all things thereunto belonging.

WE had places enough to send to for change of apparel, as rich as we pleased, or as beggerly again on the contrary, according as our design required. Having layen in *Lavender* about a fortnight in this house, not onely to sweeten us, but that the rumour of our escape, and search for us might be over, we got our selves change of habits; Then did we all consult with our looking-glasses, for the change of our faces, not suffering our own judgments to pass, without the approbation of the rest. In the first place *I* got me a cole-black Perriwigg (my own hair being flaxen) and a small false beard suitable, with whiskers in the *Spanish* fashion. It was no great trouble to black my eye-brows every morning; then clapping a patch on my left eye, stealing out of the room, while my companions were busied about the same thing not minding me, and coming in again presently, my appearance did put them all into a very strange confusion. *I* changed my voice, and asked them what they were doing; and speaking to them in a tone they were not acquainted with, their chops mov'd incessantly, but the Devil a word *I* could understand; they had got a palsy

palsy in their jawes, by their suddain surprizal: To have observed the several Monkey-faces, and Baboon-postures, could not but extract laughter from the severest Cynick. Why don't you answer me, and that quickly, ye sneaking dumb raskals? Looking most piteously one upon the other, expecting who should speak first, at last said one, We mean no harm, we are only preparing some things for a Mask, which shortly will be presented to the Citizens, and we are persons therein concerned. I could not hold longer, but burst forth into an excessive laughter, by which they understood their mistake, not without shame enough to think that the apprehension of danger so slightly grounded, should so terrifie them, being struck dumb and almost dead with a pannick fear. To be brief, we very well liked the manner of our Metamorphosis, and having borrowed some Mony as the necessary tools of our intended trade, we adventured abroad. The first Mouth we pickt up was in the long walk by *Christ-church*, upon the account of a wager: there came towards us a young man, who by his garb seemed to be a Merchants man (he afterwards proved so, and his Cashier) I stept to him, and said, Sir, if it may not be too troublesome to you, I beseech you resolve me one question. This Gentleman hath laid an Angel with me, & referr'd the decision thereof to the next that came this way, whether this next adjacent Hospital be Saint *Thomas*'s, or Saint *Bartholomew*'s. Said the young Man, I can assure you, it is Saint *Bartholomew*'s. Why then friend (said I) you have lost. Sir, will you be pleased (if it may not be any great hindrance to your present affairs) accompany us to the next Tavern, and participate of the loosings? for I scorn to pocket it. He

conde-

condescended, and so we went together: we discover'd not any thing till the sixth pint, and then my friend as by chance found a pair of cards in a corner of the window, which he himself had layed there before. Here is a pair of cards (said he) come, to pass away the time let us play for a pint or so; so I really took up my friend, But was the game; I won of him two or three pints, and ever and anon I would drink to the stranger, so that now he began to be warm'd, and seemed to take delight in our play, looking over my hand, and sometimes prompting me to see him when he did put to me. At last my friend played the high game, as the term of art renders it; that is, he gave me two trays and an ace, and reserved for himself two trays and a duse. My Antagonist puts to me: I pretended I knew not what to do, shewed my game to the stranger that looked over my shoulder: he jogs me on the elbowe; I still delayed: come Sir (said my opponent) what will you do? I will hold you five pound on these very cards in my hand. I receiv'd the second jog: will you go my halfs, Sir, said I? He answered me, that he would. But alas, we lost: It could be no otherwise. This so animated the stranger, that he perswaded me to play again, and that he would go the moity of every stake. Sometimes 'twas so ordered that I won, but in fine, I lost forty pound, my Cully being half. He would now give over, being much perplex'd that he should thus lose his Masters money: but that he might forget the condition he was in, we drank round some half a dozen healths: So that now I thought it high time to provoke him again to let down his milk, by some new trick or stratagem.

Now

Now did we fall to the *Preaching of the Parson*, a trick on the Cards, which hath deceived the most curious eye, and the warieſt of men; with which we gained from our young Merchant, the major part of his Mony.

Laſtly, to the intent we might without any further delays give him an acquittance for the reſt of his Money, we drew out ſome other implements, *viz.* Dice fixt for our purpoſe, as *High-fullums*, which ſeldom run any other chance then four, five and ſix; *Low-fullums*, which run one, two, and three, &c.

By theſe means we ſent him home pennileſs and heartleſs, whilſt we drank Healths to the confuſion of ſorrow.

CHAP. XXXII.

From hence he goes, by the direction of his Comerades, to a new-fashion Bawdy-house ; *he describes it, and relates his own success.*

UPon the division, we found each mans share to amount to 40 l. a piece. Being over joy'd at our first good success, we resolv'd to return thanks for our good fortunes in some private Meeting-house, where we might have a Sister to assist in the carrying on the work of the day. The Devil in all Societies, never wants his Factor, or one to sollicite his business: For, I had no sooner intimated my desires, but presently one of my Rope-brokers gave me information of a place fit for that purpose, and that the like was not any where to be found. Being prickt on with the desire of novelty, and to understand the curiosities therein, I went according to my directions solely ; for company in such designs commonly frustrates expectations. They advised me when I came to the door, to pretend I came to inquire out lodgings: At the first, I verily thought my self abused by these Rogues, or mistaken in the house, when I saw a Porter standing at the door with his tipt staffe: To undeceive my self, I confidently, yet civilly askt him, whether there were any lodgings to be let there? Yes, Sir, (said he) which you may view if you will give your self the trouble of walking in. I had no sooner entred the door, but I was met by a grave Matron, who readily understood (as I conceived) my approach, by her sentinels

nels above in the windows. Madam, (ſaid I) I am informed, that here are lodgings to be let: There is ſo, Sir, (ſaid ſhe) and with that, conducted me into her Parlor (which was gallantly furniſhed) there to take a ſtricter view of me, as to my perſon, but more eſpecially my garb, by which ſhe might partly judge how well lin'd my pockets were. After the reſolution of ſome trivial queſtions, for diſcourſe ſake, ſhe was ſo well ſatisfied in me, that ſhe ſhew'd me the way up one pair of ſtairs, into a very large and fair dining-room, hung with rich Tapiſtry, and adorned round with excellent pictures, the effigies of divers Ladies (as I took them to be) renowned and celebrated in all ages, for the faireſt and moſt beautiful of that ſex. A ſervant brought us up, immediately after our entry into that room, a bottle of Sack, without any order given, as I could perceive; out of which the old Gentlewoman drank to me, expreſſing my welcome. For want of other diſcourſe (as I thought) becauſe we were both ſilent a while, for I was contemplating her face, in which I could then ſee ſtill the goodly ruines of a beautiful and handſome countenance; Sir, ſaid ſhe, as you are a Gentleman, you may have ſome knowledge in that noble Art of Limning, ſince for its excellency it is in theſe our days (and hath been in moſt ages) much ſtudied by the Gentry of this Nation; wherefore, your judgement, Sir, which of all theſe Pictures is the beſt drawn, or according to the rules of Phyſiognomy, hath the beſt features? Madam, ſaid I, I ſhall freely give you my judgement; which is, This, in my opinion, (pointing at one) for ſhe hath a full large front, her archt eye-brows are thick and black, without any ſtragling hairs, her eyes are of

the ſame colour, and by their intuitive faculty, ſeem to penetrate that which they look on; paſſing her cheeks, which carry in them an excellent air, and her noſe, which is neither too long nor too ſhort, view her lips, whoſe plumpneſs and redneſs reſemble a double Cherry; and then, for the dimples in her cheeks and chin, I could make them the ſubject of an whole dayes diſcourſe: what might be ſaid more of this repreſentation, I ſhall wave, wiſhing my ſelf no greater happineſs, then to diſcourſe the reſt with the real ſubſtance: which is not impoſſible, Sir, if you can have but the faith to believe your own eyes; and ſo inſtantly thereupon withdrew her ſelf, leaving me amazed at what I had already ſeen, my heart the mean while beating an alarm to my paſſions, to be all in readineſs at the approach of this celeſtial creature. Hearing a ruſhing of ſilks, I drew my eyes off the Picture, and looking towards the door, there I ſaw enter an Angel; for I could not believe there could be ſo much perfection in any one mortal: with profound reverence I ſtood at a diſtance, admiring, or rather adoring her perſon, till ſhe ſmillingly and familiarly deſired me to ſit down. Being come to my ſelf, I could talk to her; and in half an hour, confidence had repoſſeſt her ancient ſeat in me. It will not only take up too much time, but alſo offend the ears of the modeſt Reader, here to inſert what diſcourſes we had; therefore I ſhall wave them, and come to the concluſion. Sir, ſaid ſhe, I queſtion not but that you are acquainted with the cuſtoms of the Houſe. I proteſted to her, I was altogether ignorant. Why, you know, that you may call for what wine you pleaſe, not exceeding four bottles; and if you pleaſe to eat,

you

you ſhall have ſome choice bit ſutable to the ſeaſon, &c. if you ſtay not all night, your expence ſhall be but forty ſhillings, and you ſhall have to boot, the enjoyment of a Miſtreſs beſides: but if you ſtay all night, then thus muſt you do (and with that drew forth ten pieces of gold) whether you fancy me or any elſe, that matters not, you muſt depoſit before you go to bed ten pound, laying it underneath your own head, and ſo muſt your bed-fellow do likewiſe; and for everytime in that whole nights venereal combat you charge and diſcharge, you are to take twenty ſhillings from your own ten pieces; and if you are ſo luſty and valiant as to draw in this manner all your own ſtake, for every time ſo doing, you may freely take twenty ſhillings from hers, and for ſo great an exploit, next day be diſmiſt with a great deal of applauſe, without expending a penny, but what you ſhall be pleaſed to diſtribute voluntarily among the ſervants. I was ſtark mad to be at it, and ſo impatient, preſuming upon mine own abilities, that I preſently told out ten pieces, challenging her to do the like, which with much willingneſs ſhe accepted of; and ſo we went to bed together. To be as good as my promiſe, in not too far intrenching on modeſty, I ſhall skip over the manner of paſſing away that night, and come to the iſſue. Telling my Money the next morning, I found I had eight pound of my ten, but for ſuch hot ſervice, I deſerved to have had my Money trebled: however, for the preſent, I thought forty ſhillings was never better ſpent, nor husbanded with ſo much recreation and delight. By her I underſtood, what manner of cattel they were that frequented that houſe, though proſtitutes and free-booters,

yet ſuch as ſcorn'd a piece of Country-dirt: ſome whereof, were perſons of no mean quality, which came thither to ſatisfie (what was impoſſible to do) their inſatiate luſts, and therefore enacted that law or cuſtom of depoſiting ten pieces, meerly to incite ſuch, who were confident in the ſtrength of their backs, to perform as much or more then nature could allow of, for the lucre of gain; and to the intent that it might not be diſcovered, either by their Husbands, or ſuch relations or friends that had received cauſes of jealouſie, they had their peeping-holes, where they might plainly and fully ſee ſuch who came upon the like accounts. If the Gentleman was unknown to that Gentlewoman whoſe picture he elected to bear him company that night, ſhe with much freedom would appear, and tender her ſelf as the ſubject of his pleaſure; otherwiſe, abſcond her ſelf. If ſo, and the Gentleman preſs hard for a ſight of her the picture repreſented, why then Madam Bawd findes ſome excuſe or other, as that picture ſhe bought caſually at ſecond-hand as ſhe paſt through Long-lane, or that it was the gift of ſome friend of hers: with many other fictions, meerly to make him deſiſt from the purſuance of his deſires. Being very much pleaſed in the ſatisfaction of my fancy, I took my leave, not without ſome acknowledgment thereof, in theſe conſequent lines.

What is a Bawdy-houſe? *I fain would know:*
It is a thing appears ſo by the ſhow?
Is that a Brothel, *or an houſe of State,*
Where Tip-ſtaff Porters do attend the gate?

Then

Then there are many noble ones I see,
And Palaces may Courts of Bawdry be:
This was a stately house, and yet was such
In stately houses Ladies take a touch.
It must be so, th'have little else to do,
Then study how to answer those that woo.
Such pamper'd flesh must yield, and few gain-says
Their own lusts motions, but with formal nays;
Rather than want that satisfaction, most
Stick not to purchase it, though at the cost
Of health and wealth, delighting thus in sence,
They never think too much the recompence.
Why should they then fond souls rail at an Whore,
Since they themselves are on that very score?
And damn all Brothels *too to Hell; but stay,*
What house is not a Brothel-house, *I pray?*
Many I've seen, with this none can compare;
A new Exchange, *where Ladies sell their Ware*
To none; they scorn thereon to set a price,
But leave it solely to the Chapman's choice:
No Sale-shop, but a Game at In *and* In;
Throw In *and* In *but ten times, and you*
Here by a female Council 'twas judg'd fit,
He that reaps pleasure here, must pay for it;
Not with his purse, so much as brawny back,
Solely affecting such who holds them tack:
And to provoke men on, no want of Wire;
Nay, all delights do here in one combine
To raise mens fancy, that he may do o're
That thing he did but even then before.
How could I do it, and enlarge my bliss,
But that I view'd her parts, as well as kiss?

Her rosie dimpled cheeks, vermilion lips,
Did blush to see her ivory thighs and hips:
I could forbear no longer, nor could wait
The tyde, but sail'd into the mouth i'th' streight.
Her round soft belly swell'd with pride below,
Like a small Hill 'twas overspread with snow:
Let a warm hand but touch it, and it will
Its moisture into pearly drops distill;
Which forc'd me boldly once again to venture;
I could not hold, attracted by Loves centre:
Then in her arms (would I might chuse that death)
She squeez'd me so, till I had lost my breath:
My routed strength I ralli'd quickly then;
Ready I was, and so did charge agen.
Thus did we do so long (for both were bent
To conquer) till at the last our shot was spent.
Retreating I did sigh, and she did sob;
She for her lusty Lad, *I for my* Mob.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIII.

He finds out his two Comerades (the Gamesters) *and after some consultation had, they resolved to reassume their* quondam *trade of* Padding; *are taken and committed to* Newgate.

FRom this house of pleasure, (where I must ingeniously confess I never received more for so little expence) I went in search of my two Gamesters, whom casually I met: The next Tavern was our Council-chamber, where Wine was the dictator. We there unanimously concluded, it was a thing beneath us to pick up here and there Crowns or Angels, but resolved on Have at all, knowing that a five hours adventure might make us possessors of 500 l. With this resolution we went and bought us horses, with all things requisite for our intended expedition: being all ready and well prepared, we took our leaves of *London* for a while; we had not rid above fifteen miles, but we baited: the Hostler knowing me, and what designes I had formerly been upon, and imagining I was steering the same course, whispered me in the ear that he had a desire to speak with me instantly: taking my opportunity, under the pretence of looking to my horse, he informed me, that there were three within drinking, that on the next morning would travel such a Road, and that they had a great charge with them. I thankt him, bidding him come to my Chamber at night, where I would discourse farther with him. Then he gave me a summary account

count of all; and after a ſmart drinking-bout, with promiſes to him of reward if we proſpered, we betook our ſelves to our reſt: in the morning very early we called for our horſes, and rid in that very Road through which thoſe three Travellers were to paſs, where we planted our ſelves very conveniently: about three hours after, we could diſcern them at a diſtance; by that time we had made our ſelves ready, they were at hand: juſt at the bottom of a ſmall hill we bid them ſtand; they askt us to what intent: we told them, that we were younger Brothers, and wanted money, and therefore muſt borrow ſome of them. With that, they all in an inſtant drew their ſwords; being not unprovided with Pocket-piſtols, we fired at them, and they again at us: we were all at level-coyl, and very equally matcht; the ſecond ſhot killed my horſe, and a fourth bereaved my Conſort of life; the third Rogue ran away: being in a labyrinth of perplexity, I thought it the beſt way to ſell my life at as dear a rate as I could (knowing very well, that if I were taken I ſhould be hanged.) I fought with my ſword as long as I could ſtand upon my legs, wounding both them and their horſes; but at laſt one unhappily ran me throw the ſword-hand, and thereupon I was diſarmed. I was carried by them before the next Juſtice of Peace, whom they enquired out, and by a *Mittimus* was committed. I could not now expect any thing but death: but the next news I heard was, that I muſt be removed to *Newgate*, there being other things to be alleadged to my charge. I was mounted again, in order to my removal, but very ill hors'd, being bound thereunto and pinnion'd. My greateſt grief (when I came into

London-

London-ſtreets) was to hear the various deſcants of the good women on me; ſome ſaying, what a pity it is ſuch an handſome young man ſhould come to the gallows ſo ſoon? others judged, I had deſerved it, otherwiſe I ſhould not have rid to Town in that poſture pinnion'd, and ſo attended with a guard. As ſoon as the Keeper ſaw me, leaping for joy, O Sir, are you come again? we will take care that you ſhall not be any more annoyed with ſmells proceeding from the Vault; and ſo without more ado, laid as much iron on me as there is in ſome Smiths ſhops, and confin'd me cloſe Priſoner to the Dungeon:

Which made me curſe thoſe acts the Fates have done,
To cauſe a ſetting ere a riſing Sun:
But ſince my doom is now decreed by Fate,
I muſt indur't, repentance is too late.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIV.

He much condemns the follies of his past actions, and in token of his unfeigned repentance, gives some general instructions to his Country-men, first how to know Padders on the Road, *by infallible signs; with other remarques worthy the observation of any Traveller, laid down in some consequent Chapters.*

BEing in this terrestrial Hell, (where darkness, horror and despair surrounded me) my conscience started out of her dead sleep, and presently demanded of me a severe account of what I had done. My guilt was such, I had not a word to speak for my self, but wished my production (as my actions were) inhumane. What did not then the apprension of an approaching and unavoidable death, suggest to my thoughts! to have onely dyed (though with the most exquisite, terrifying, and soul-excruciating tortures) was not a thing the spirit of man should shrink at; but the consideration of an eternal punishment hereafter, justly inflicted on such who have offended an infinite God, absolutely distracted me. So that me thoughts, I already heard the howls and hollow grones of damned souls, which add to the weight of their everlasting misery. Having somewhat appeased my enraged conscience, by a faithful promise and constant resolution to lead a new life, if I should escape the danger of the Law, I determined with my self, to shew the first fruits of my

my reformation, by publishing something to the world, that might serve as a guide for Travellers, how they might pass in safety on their way. To that purpose I acquainted my Keeper with my good intentions; but that being no particular profit to him, he valued not the publick, and therefore rejected my good motion, till I greas'd his fist, and then I had the accommodation of a Candle, Pen, Ink, and Paper, &c. The uncertainty of their attire, various disguises, non-constant residence, and changeable names, makes me incapable to do what I would: Therefore I will do what I can (according to my small experience, occasioned by my no long continuance among them.) Riding on the Road (if you have company) it may be two or three shall overtake you, and seem to be much afraid of you: they will pretend to be even now set upon by half a dozen stout fellows, but that they did beat the Rogues, forcing them to fly for safety: and this fiction they use to seal with basket-hilt-oaths: thus by your answers they sound you whether you dare fight; if not, they will wait an opportunity to act their roguery on you; which having done, as a reward for what unwillingly you have left them, they will pretend to give you a word shall protect you better than your sword, from any injury shall be done you upon the like account: but this is nothing else than a meer cheat, and no securing charm; for we valued not words, when our wants were in pursuit of Moneys. Not but that we used some formal words among our selves when ready to seize a prize; and observing other company, either before or behinde, to desist a while, by which we knew what we had to do, and the ignorant Travellers suspected no wrong.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXV.

What is to be taken heed unto, before the Traveller begins his Journey.

MOst respected Countrey-men, and more especially you who frequently pass the Road, the most part of my notorious wicked life having been consumed in all manner of cheats and debauchery, and that in part of late maintained by robbing: seeing now the wretchedness of that course of life, and being sensible of the injury I have done my Countrey, I looked upon my self as bound to satisfie the debt I owe to you, to the uttermost of my power, which reacheth to an act not more satisfactory, than good advice how to avoid those dangers which too many of late days have fallen into, since Dammee Plumes of Feathers came in fashion. First then, if you carry a charge about you, make it not known to any, and conceal the time of your departure in your own breast; For it is a custom no less common than indiscreet and foolish, among some sort of persons, to blaze abroad among their reputed friends, the time of their intended journey, and vaingloriously make them acquainted with what considerable sums they shall carry with them; by which means the Son hath oftentimes betrayed the Father, and one friend another, by informing or complotting with some of the Padding Society; the discoverer sharing (for giving notice of the prize) one quarter or more of the gain he betrays, when but for this foolish humour they had not been way-lay'd. Again, have a special care both of the Hostler, Chamberlain, and Host himself, the two first the thief is sure to bribe; and the last, in expectation of a share with them (as it is ordered) or in hopes that the major part of what they

get

get ſhall be profuſely ſpent in his houſe, gives them items where the booty lies. Eſpecially be ſure on the road to aſſociate with none but ſuch as you finde inclined rather to leave your company than keep it; For they are very ſuſpicious perſons, and oftentimes prove dangerous, that preſs into your ſociety, and are very inquiſitive to know whither you intend, ſpinning out the time with many impertinent queſtions. But if you would know whether the ſtrangers intentions be honeſtly inclined, take occaſion to make ſome ſtay; obſerve you in the mean time their motion: for if they make an halt, or alight, ſo that you may overtake them, follow at a diſtance; but if their pace be ſo ſlow that you needs muſt overtake them, look about you, and provide for your ſafety, for there is no ſurer ſymptom of an Highway-man than ſuch purpoſed delayes. The other uſual marks of ſuch Maths be theſe; they commonly throw a great leagu'er-cloak over their ſhoulders, covering their face, or elſe they have viſibly diſguiſed their faces in ſome manner or other. Now of late they finde very uſeful a Vizard in every reſpect (but for the largeneſs) like the *a-la-mode* Vizard-masks ſo much worn by Gentlewomen, who endeavor to conceal the ſhame of their wanton actions by abſconding their faces. If you meet with any who have none of theſe things, as ſoon as they come ſomewhat near you, fix your eye full in their face: if they turn their heads from you, keep your diſtance, and ride from them with what expedition you can: but being ſurprized by any you know, be very careful that you diſcover it not to them; for theſe Deſperado's never think themſelves ſecure, till they have prevented your giving intelligence, by cutting aſunder the thread of your life. Obſerve whether their beards and hair of

their

their head agree in a colour, and are not counterfeit: and be ſure to beware of him that rides in a Mountier-cap, and of ſuch as whiſper off; or of any one ſingle perſon that intrudes into your company; for that is one way they have to enſnare the Traveller: he will tell you a great many merry and facetious ſtories, meerly to ingratiate himſelf with you; which having obtained, he ſhews himſelf more than ordinarily civil, and ſo fearful of any thing that may prejudice his new acquaintance, that he no ſooner eſpies two riding toward them, but he apparently trembles, and will preſently queſtion his new friends, what charge they have about them: if little, the beſt way were to yield to theſe approaching perſons, if thieves, rather than hazard a life; but if it be any thing conſiderable, he will preſently vow to be true to them, and rather than they ſhall come to any damage or loſs, he will fight with them as long as he hath breath. Theſe ſo cauſleſly ſuſpected, were perhaps downright honeſt fellows: but before they have travelled five miles further, 'tis ten to one but they overtake two or three more, one it may be riding aſide with twiſts of Hay in ſtead of boots, it may be with a fork, bill, or goad in his hand, like a country-boor. It may be your newly-entertained treacherous friend will tell you that he will make good ſport with this Countrey-Bumpkin, and ſo to that purpoſe ask him ſome fooliſh inpertinent queſtion, which the other ſhall anſwer as ridiculouſly; ſo ſpinning out the time till a convenient place and a fit opportunity ſerve; then ſhall this pretended friend ſeize one of you himſelf, and my hedge-creeper turn Hector, and lay hold on another: and now will it be in vain for you to ſtrive, for nothing but mony will ranſom you out of their hands.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVI.

Instructions in what manner, at what time, and what Road is most safe to ride.

THere are so many ways to rob the innocent, that it behoveth every man to be very circumspect, how, when, and where he rides. If you have a quantity of Money about you, choose rather to ride by night then day: for by this means you are freed from any Horseman or Cutter whatever. But this course cannot seal your protection from base sheep-stealing peny-Rogues, the baseness & lowness of whose spirits wil stoop for a noble, though they hang for their pains; therefore take heed of their long poles, and that they do not suddainly start out and lay hold on your bridle. As for the nobler sort of Rogues, this they believe as an undeniable Maxime, that none will ride by night that are worth the robbing. Besides, they are oblig'd to take their Inn betimes, lest through mistrust they should be apprehended: Moreover, they hardly dare adventure in the dark, because they cannot discern what dangerous defences the assailed have, as Pistols, or other private weapons in readiness, nor see their own advantages: and withal, it will be no difficult matter to convey in the obscurity of the night what they have undiscovered into some ditch. Chuse to travel in by-roads; for it is a general rule with Highwaymen, to keep their station on the greatest roads, that of the number which pass by, they may select such as

they think will prove the richeſt booties. Here now as a Corollary, take notice of a fooliſh cuſtom: ſome when they ride by any place that commonly ſpeaks danger, they will buſtle up together ſide by ſide; which is the uſual overthrow of ſuch. Wherefore take my counſel here, when ere you ride, in fear eſpecially, ride far aſunder, at leaſt a ſtones throw: by ſo doing none durſt ſet upon you, fearing leſt this ſtragling order give ſome leave to eſcape undoubtedly, and ſo raiſe the Country in their purſuit.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVII.

How a Man is to behave himself if beset or surprised.

WHen the Rogue bids you ſtand, look not about as if amazed, or hoping for a reſcue; for this doth but incourage them to the height of reſolution and expedition: but looking ſternly, as if fear were a ſtranger to you, making your brow the thorne of rage and fury, draw, and undauntedly tell them, that though you have but little, yet you would willingly ſacrifice your life rather than loſe a penny; and adde ten more to it (if you had them) then have your reputation ſtained with cowardiſe. This is the readieſt and moſt certain way to ſave both your Money and credit; for they fighting with a guilty conſcience within and without, againſt a Country, Law and Juſtice, if nobly a man reſiſts (this I know experimentally) the ſtouteſt, and moſt undaunted, and higheſt ſpirit of them all, will ſtoop to diſcouragement. Some I have known, that durſt out-brave the roaring Cannon to the mouth, yet their courages have found an alteration, when on this account they have met with a bold and nobly reſolved Antagoniſt: but if by your own negligence, and the malevolency of fortune, the pleaſure of your journey is eclipſed and clouded by a ſudden ſurpriſal, and that you ſee no hopes but that you muſt yield, be not ſo unwiſe to ſtrive when it is too late, but give them the beſt words you can, and rack your wits to pleaſe their ear, moſt devoutly

wiſhing you had more moneys to ſupply their preſent occaſions; and ſo baniſhing all dejectedneſs from your looks, deliver ſome, and ſo perhaps they will let you paſs without further ſearch. If they make a ſecond offer, yield freely to it: then it may be they will ſift you ſoundly; never in that time lay your hand near your Money; and ſeeming fearleſs, it will be a means to make their ſuſpicion ofagreater ſum to vaniſh. This I have know my ſelf, that when I have taken ſo much as pleaſed me well, by mens fear I have had grounds to think they had more, and ſo made me reſearch; laying my hand but near the place where they had concealed the reſt, ſuddenly would they cry out, that they were undone, when as yet I had found nothing; but by this their fooliſh and indiſcreet carriage, I have found the remainder, which otherwiſe might have been ſecure and ſafe from me.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVII.

Directions; if robbed, how to follow the Thieves; which way to set Heu *and* Cry *after them; how to coast, and where to find them.*

IF you are robbed, there is no help but to indeavour to surprize the Thieves by a strict pursuit: Therefore let no *Remora* or delay deter you from obtaing your wish, and so seize them that so lately seized you. In the first place, scowre the next Road, not streight before, but either on the right or left-hand; for they know *Heu* and *Cries* never cross the passages, but go streight along. If in so doing you miss them, then conclude they are sheltred in some Inn which you have past, and therefore you must set some careful spies, with a sufficient assistance near at hand, and be confident you will see them come that way, without the least apprehension of fear, or fear of apprehension. But this observe, that if they light on any considerable sum, then do they ride that night to their general rendezvous in *London*, which is too sure a shelter for them: but observably take notice, for here is as eminent an example of their subtilty, as any ever the Devil inrich'd their knowledge with; For, if you are robbed in the Eastern quarter, pursue them not in the direct Road to *London* with *Hue* and *Cry*, for by some other way they are fled; but haste to the City, and in *Westminster*, *Holborn*, the *Strand* and *Covent-Garden*, search speedily, for there they are. If Northward they light on you, then to *Southwark*, the *Bank-side*, or *Lambeth* they are gone; and when you find any one, seize all with him, for they are all companions that are together. CHAP.

CHAP. XXXIX.

Cordial advice, and infallible instructions for the Inn-keeper, *how to know Thieves from his honest Guests.*

METhinks the many tragical examples of Inn-keepers, who have harboured and countenanced Thieves, were sufficient (I should think) to deter those that survive from doing the like; wherefore my advice to them in general is, that their chiefest care be, not to wink at any such life-destroying actions for hope of gain, lest that sweet be imbittered by future trouble and disgrace. That you may know them, observe these Rules: First, they are extraordinary curious about their horses; they will have them as strangely dreſt, as strangely fed, with Mashes, bread, flesh, and mingled provender, and that in an unusual quantity. If any wonder at the extraordinary feeding of their horses, they will indeavour to palliate their design therein, by telling that their tricks and good abilities deserve it: nay, sometimes they will boast, that their worthy services will soon repay the cost; using the like dark words to that effect, which are palpable grounds for suspicion. It is their custom likewise, to ask, Whose horse is that? or, What is the owner thereof standing by? of what function or quality? whither he intends to travel? how far, and when? Observe again, that their cloak-bags are for the most part empty, carrying them only but to make a shew. Next, the Chamberlain conducting them

them to their Chamber, he is presently dismist; but let him hearken, and if they are high-way men, 'tis ten to one but they fall to share what they have purchased that day; and he shall see every one taking his dividend, as well as hear the money, if he but narrowly pry into the Chamber. This they never defer, lest he which hath the purse should cheat the rest. But above all, for their discovery, make this trial; Cause one to knock hastily at the gate, giving him instructions in the mean time that attends on them, to observe their carriage then, and he shall see them start and stare in each others face with gastly looks, being struck with fear and amazement: Speak so that they may hear you, seemingly to some or other in the house, asking, what Officers those are? what is their business? or whom do they look for? or the like. If they seem much frighted, bid them fear not, for none shall search where they are, to offer them any injury, and that they are as safe with him, as in a well-fortified Castle. By this means you may pry into their private thoughts and actions so far, as that you may gather, not only substantial grounds for more than bare conjectures, but it may be they will confess something too, desiring your concealment and succour, and they shall think themselves for ever ingaged: after this you may use your own discretion. Then again, you may perceive by their loitering and disregard of time, what they expect; for they only bait but to observe what purchase they can see pass by; which when they have espied, they will pretend immediate business calls them to be gone, and so mount in great haste. Again, when they come to an Inn to lodge, they commonly come in divided, or in

ſeveral companions, fruſtrating the *Heu* and *Cry* by their number: beſides, if one part be ſurprized, the other may eſcape; and when the reſidue comes in, they ſeem as ſtrangers one to the other, enquiring of mine Hoſt what their Companions are, what Country-men, whether he knows them? and if they finde he hath either jealouſie or ſuſpicion of any of them, they will feign ſome buſineſs that neceſſitates their ſpeedy departure: but if you take them for honeſt men, as they met by ſeeming chance in your Kitchin, ſo after ſome formal civil ſalutations, and drinking together, they ſoon become acquainted, and before they part, ſhew much familiarity. Thus as I was farther indeavouring to lay open their devices and deceits, to repair what wrong my Country had ſuſtained by me, word was brought me, that I muſt immediately appear at the Bar, and there anſwer what ſhould be objected againſt me; and it was but juſt that I ſhould be now expoſed to the Law of Juſtice, ſince I had ſo often rejected and ſlighted the Law of Mercy.

CHAP.

CHAP. XL.

He received sentence of Condemnation; he thereupon seriously contemplates death, and considers Eternity.

APpearing at the Sessions, and seeing so many of my Adversaries ready to give in their evidence against me, I concluded my self a lost man; my very countenance betrayeth both my thoughts of guilt and despair. In short, I received sentence of Death to be hanged at *Tyburn* by the neck till I was dead: I thought these sad tidings would have presently deprived me of my life, and so have saved the Hangman a labour. All the way I went back to *Newgate*, I fancied nothing but Gibbets stood in my way, and that I saw no other trades but Cord-winders. Being entred the prison, I was forthwith put into the Dungeon, laden with shackles: I had not been many hours there, before a charitable Physician of the soul, I mean a Minister, came to visit me, who advised me to repent, since it was high time, and endeavouring to disburden my conscience, by extracting from me a general ingenious confession of what enormous crimes I had committed. Finding this person to have no other design, but meerly for my souls sake, I dissected the actions of my whole life, not omitting any thing that might be accounted sinful. He was amazed to hear such notorious Roguery in one Man, and so young; wherefore, before he applied any cordial, he administred his corrosives, and so thorowly searcht every

every corner of my heart, that there was nothing hid from him. In the first place, he made me sensible of the wickedness of my life, and that every, nay, the least evil action, deserved the loss of eternal and inexpressible happiness, and instead thereof, torments everlasting and intolerable. It will take up too much time, to give an account of every thing this pious man alleadged for my information, contrition, and consolation: so effectually and powerfully he delivered his divine Message, that the obdurateness of my heart was able to hold out no longer, but melting into tears, was willing to have its flintiness broken by the hammer of Sacred Writ. Finding me in so good a temper, he left me to God and my self, for the perfecting of that work he had so hopefully & successfully begun. I began to consider what I was, only a statue of dust kneaded with tears, and mov'd by the hid engines of restless passions; a clod of earth, which the shortest Fever can burn to ashes, and the least showre of rheums wash away to nothing; and yet I made as great a noise in the world, as if both the Globes (those glorious Twins) had been unwombed from that formless Chaos, by the Midwifry of my wit: all my actions were attended with so much success, and so answerable to my desires, as if I had been one of heavens privy-Counsellors; which swelled me up with so much arrogance, that I spake thunder, lookt lightning, and breathed destruction; and by the eloquence of my own vanity, I perswaded my self, that the machinations of my brain were able to unhinge the Poles: but it is otherwise decreed, that the Ministers of Justice should put a period to my boundless pride, to make me know I am but man, and that

mortal

mortal too. And having but a short time to live, I thought it very requisite to think of that which must shortly be the means to convey me either to bliss or woe; by so doing, I seized on death before it seized on me. It was the fittest subject I could busie my soul about; for what more heavenly, than the thought of immortality? and what so necessary, as the thought of death? *Seneca* saith, *When he was a young man he studied to live well; when aged, how to die well:* but I never practised *Artem bene vivendi*, and therefore am so ignorant in *Arte bene moriendi*; which makes me so fearful, that I know not how to be careful of not being found unprepared. Methinks I already hear that doleful saying, *Ite imparati in paratum.* My sole companions were now despair and fear, for the King of fear is death; and indeed there is nothing absolutely fearful, but what tends to death; and I am confident, the fear of death is worse than the pains of death: for, fear of death kills us often, whereas death it self can do it but once. Life would not be troubled with too much care, nor death with too much fear, because fears betray, and cares disorder those succours which reason would afford to both: and though some say, he is more sorrowful than is necessary, that is sorrowful before there is necessity; yet that soul cannot be in a good condition, so long as it fears to think of dying; but did I not sorrow now, and justly fear that messenger that must bring me before the Tribunal of the great God of Heaven, I should have too little time to wash away so many black spots, or implore my Saviour to do it for me with his blood, especially having nothing but objects of terror and amazement before my eyes; but I never needed have feared

feared what I ſhall ſuffer when dead, if I had not deſerved it whilſt I lived. Life is not alike to all men: To ſuch a wicked wretch as I am, the beſt had been, that I never had been, and the next beſt were to live long; in this condition, it was ill for me that I was born, worſe for me that I muſt die: for without unfeigned repentance, this dying life will bring me to a living death; whereas a good man is otherwiſe minded, he counts his end the beſt of his being, for that brings him to the fruition of his hope: could death end miſery, it ſhould be the greateſt happineſs I would wiſh: but my conſcience will not let me lye, for I fear the end of my preſent miſeries will be but the beginning of worſe; yea, ſuch as death it ſelf cannot terminate. Now came into my minde the conſideration of Eternity; and with it, I remembred how it was repreſented by the Ancients, which very much helpt my preſent Contemplation; which was thus: A vaſt Den full of horror, round about which a Serpent windes it ſelf, and in the winding bites it ſelf by the tayl. At the right hand of this Den, ſtands a young man of a moſt beautiful and pleaſant countenance, holding in his right hand a Bow and two Arrows, and in his left an Harp. In the entrance ſits an old man oppoſite, and having his eyes very intent on his Table-book, writes according to the dictations of the young man ſtanding by. At the left hand of this Den, ſits a grave Matron gray-headed, and having her eyes alwayes buſied. At the mouth hereof, are four ſtairs aſcending by degrees; the firſt is of iron, the ſecond of braſs, the third of ſilver, and the laſt of gold: On theſe are little children ſporting up and down, playing, fearleſs, and inapprehenſive of falling. The

ſight

ſight of this Emblem of Eternity inculcated into my thoughts this interpretation: The Den, which was bottomleſs, ſignified to me the incomprehenſibility of Eternity; the circumferating Serpent, Time; the young man, the great Creator, who never grows old, nor admits of in himſelf the leaſt mutability or change, in whoſe hand is Heaven, Earth and Hell: on Earth and Hell are her arrows faſtned; but in Heaven there is the Harp, fulneſs of joy, and pleaſures inexpreſſible: The old man I lookt upon to be Fate; or (now to ſpeak in a Chriſtian dialect) the decrees of God from all eternity; the grave Matron, Providence; the Stairs, diſtinct Times and Ages; the Children running up and down the ſtairs without fear of danger, do ſignifie fooliſh Man and Woman, who regardleſs of their ſalvation, ſport and play with it ſo long, till they ſlipt into Eternity. So have I been careleſs of that which ſhould have been my greateſt care, though I knew (but would not know) that the leaſt and lighteſt touch of death were ſufficient, in a moment, to tranſlate me from Time to Eternity. Were we all to live a thouſand years (whereas the Executioner is to put a period to my life in one day longer) we ſhould before we had ran half our courſe, in our very non-age, apply our ſelves to repentance and newneſs of life. Now, now is the time, every hour, every moment: now one part of an hour (as I am informed, to my great comfort) may obtain pardon here, which all Eternity cannot hereafter. Therefore, let this now be my time (this one day I have left me) to cancel my debts and trepaſſes againſt Heaven, which I can never do in Hell-fire, in all the years and times to come hereafter. Let ſuch who

have

have liv'd (as I) in all manner of wickedneſs, conſider what Eternity is, which may make them return like the penitent Prodigal. What then is Eternity? It is a Circle running back into it ſelf, whoſe centre is every where, and circumference no where, that is to ſay, infinite: It is an Orb that hath neither beginning nor ending: Or, it is a Wheel,

Volvitur & uolvetur in omne volubilis ævum.

A Wheel that turns, a Wheel that turned ever:
A Wheel that turns, and will leave turning never.

Eternity is like a year, continually wheeling about, which returns again to the ſame point from whence it began, and ſtill wheels about again. It is an ever-running Fountain, whither the waters after many turnings flow back again, that they may alwayes flow It is a bottomleſs pit, whoſe revolutions are endleſs. It may be compared to a ſnake bowed back unto it ſelf orbicularly, holding its tail in its mouth; which in its end doth again begin, and never ceaſeth to begin. What is Eternity? It is a duration always preſent, it is one perpetual day, which is not divided into that which is paſt, and that which is to come: Or, it is an age of ages, never expiring, and never changing: Or, more properly, It is a beginning continuing, never ending, always beginning, in which the bleſſed alwayes begin a bleſſed life, in which the damned alwayes die, and after all death, and ſtruggling therewith, always begin again to die. As Hell-torments are eternal, ſo will the conſcience be perpetually tormented with deep and horrid deſpair for the

the life past: Their worm shall not die. The Poets of old alluded to this place notably, in that fiction or fable of *Tytius*, whom *Virgil* feigneth, that a flying Vulture every day gnaws and tears his Liver, which is every night again repaired and made up, that every day the Vulture may have more matter to prey upon. What is this Vulture, but the worm I speak of? and what is his Liver, but the conscience always gnawn and tormented? Not only this (as he that preacht my Funeral-Sermon told me) but all the torments of the damned shall never have end, because there can be no place for satisfaction: For, although these inexpressible torments shall continue many millions of years; yet shall there not one hour, no, not one minute of respite be granted: Let us then be no longer forgetful of our selves, and so degenerate into beasts. Lord, make me now seriously to consider our end, and what shall come after, without thine infinite mercy, unsufferable, unutterable, and eternal torments. All men are in the way of Eternity, but I am now almost at my journeys end: I sit on the stairs of Eternity, expecting when one small thrust shall plunge me into the bottomless pit, where one hours punishment shall be more grievous (as *Thomas a Kempis* saith) then 100 years here in the bittereſt of torments: There they are tortured for infinite millions of ages, and are so far from finding an end, as never to be able to hope for any end. The consideration of these things brought me to that pass, as I was content to suffer any thing in this life, so that I might not suffer in the life to come. Though a King, I should willingly and patiently have endured what *Andronicus* did, Emperour of the East; who (as History relates)

being

being overcome and taken prisoner by *Isaac Angelo*, had immediately two great chains of iron put about his neck; and being laden with fetters, was brought before *Isaac*, who delivered him over to the rage of the multitude, to be abused at their pleasure. This rabble being incenst and stimulated on by revenge, some buffeted him, some bastinado'd him, others pulled him by the beard, twitching the hair from his head, dashing out his teeth, dragging him in publick through the streets: the insolence of women was such, as to fall upon him, leaving the marks of their nails in his Imperial face. After all this, they cut off his right hand: thus maimed and bruised, he was thrown into the Dungeon of Thieves and Robbers, without either attendance, or the least thing necessary to sustain life: Some few dayes being past, they put out one of his eyes: thus mangled, they put upon him an old rotten short coat, shav'd his head, set him upon a scabbed Camel, with his face towards the tail, put on his head a crown of Garlick, made him hold in his hand the Camels tail instead of a Scepter, and so they carried him through the market-place very leisurely, with great pomp and triumph. Here did the most impudent crew, and base among the people, like Tygers, after an inhumane manner fall upon him, not considering in the least, that not three dayes before he was no less than an Emperor, crowned with a royal Diadem, whose frowns were inevitable death, was honoured, yea, adored of all men. Their rage and madness fitted every one with instruments to execute their revenge: Some struck him on the head with sticks, others fill'd his nostrils with dirt, others squeezed spunges upon his face soaked in humane and beastial

beastial excrements: some threw stones, others dirt at him. An impudent woman as he past, came running out with scalding water in her hand, and poured it on his head. All these indignities which they exercised upon this poor Emperor, did not satisfie their insatiate revenge, but bringing him to the Theatre, took him down from the Camel, and hung him up by the heels: yet did he behave himself like a man, by bearing patiently what was inflicted upon him, being never heard to cry out against the cruelty of his fate. All that he was heard to say, was this, which he often repeated, *Domine miserere*, *Domine miserere*. Thus hanging up, one woud have thought their malice should have ceased; but they spared him not as long as he lived; for pulling his Coat from his body, they tore him with their nails. One more cruel than the rest, ran his Sword through his bowels as he was hanging: Two others, to try whose Sword was sharpest, cut him and gasht him in several places; and so ended his life miserably, but was not suffered to be buried. Oh, that my condition were as *Andronicus*, to suffer all that man can lay upon me, that I might not perish for ever: I would be content to be miserable for so short a time, that I may not be miserable to all eternity. Questionless he could never have suffered such things so constantly and couragiously, but that he had eternity in his thoughts; and were our minds imployed about the same subject, any adversity or affliction we should more easily bear. From the time of my condemnation till Munday morning I slept not, neither did I eat and drink: then did I hear my passing-bell (having heard the day before my Funeral-Sermon) every

ſtroke methought carried my ſoul one degree higher, being confident I had made my peace above. Whilſt I was in the depth of Meditation, and my ſoul breathing out this ſhort ejaculation,

Hear O great God of my relief,
Help I implore from thee;
Thou once hadſt mercy on a Thief,
Have mercy now on me.

Behold, a friend came to me (that never viſited me during my impriſonment) but now in the time of need brought me a Reprieve: when I lookt thereon at firſt, I could not believe my own eyes; I thought I dreamt, or that grief had ſo diſtracted me, as that I imagined things that are not. My friend at length cleer'd up my doubts; but I ſhall tell you this for a truth, I knew not whether I were beſt accept of this life-preſerving courteſie: For, methought I had ſo well ſettled my eternal concerns, as that I had nothing elſe to do, but die. But I had ſo many ſollicitations from the fleſh, that I could not but yield to live a little longer, returning hearty thanks to my Creator, and to my friend under God, my lifes preſerver.

About a fortnight after, I was ſent on board, in order to my tranſportation; my ſentence of Death being converted into a ſeven years Baniſhment.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLI.

Being on board, he descants on his ensuing misery; yet draws comfort to himself from the sufferings of others. He relateth how he was freed from his intended banishment by a double Shipwrack; the manner thereof he amply declareth.

THe Ship that was to transport me lay at *Wollidge*: about the latter end of *August* 1650. I was conveyed aboard a lusty Ship, a *Virginia*-Merchantman, and was instantly clapt under hatches; but I knew they would quickly call me aloft, if there was any fighting work; as such a thing might easily be, since the Sea was no where free, from such as would make a prize of what Vessels were too weak to contend with them. Having pen, ink, and paper about me, I busied my thoughts and pen in contriving consolation for my disquieted and consolate minde, thus:

Why should not I with patience suffer? some
Have kist what brought them to their Martyrdom.
The King of Kings once suffer'd on a Cross;
And our good King indur'd three Kingdoms loss.
Shall I (fool) then at any cross take grief?
A Cross was once a sinners best relief.
But must I now to Sea? well, 'tis no matter;
Fortune now frowns, though heretofore did flatter.
Let not my soul despond, since 'tis my hap,
I'll scorn that Whore, *and trust to* Thetis *lap:*

Though ſhe *may foam with anger, and the winde*
May aggravate her paſſion, I may finde
Her calm again, and ſet me on that ſhore,
Where I may Moar, and put to Sea no more.
Neptune *may ſhake his* Trident, *and each wave,*
Or tumbling billow, may become my grave.
A thundring Cannon may pronounce my death,
Or a ſmall ſhot bereave me of my breath:
All which may throng together in full crowds,
To make m'a winding-ſheet *of* tatter'd ſhrowds.
The windes ſhall ſing my requiem, *and my knell*
Shall be a peal of Ordnance, that ſhall tell
My angry fates I'm dead; and the Sea muſt
Intomb without the form of duſt *to* duſt.
But I hope better things, and do believe,
My good events will make the furies *grieve.*

About the beginning of *September* following, we ſet ſail for the *Downs*. As ſoon as we had weighed Anchor, a thick melancholy cloud encompaſſed my thoughts, and ſo much ſadneſs ſeized my ſpirits, as if I had been not ſo much taking my leave of my dearly beloved Country, as leaving the world. Though my ſoul could not foreſee the leaſt danger, nor be troubled at the apprehenſion of what ſlavery I was to undergo in my exilement; yet certainly I found this ſtrange anguiſh and propaſſion to be ominous, proceeding from ſomething divine, which is able to unriddle the Apocrypha of nature, and made my ſoul ſenſible of ſome approaching miſchief. Having been about five dayes at Sea, one morning, juſt as the Sun began to gild our Hemiſphere with his Golden rays, the Boat-ſwain made us all turn out, & commanded all hands

hands upon deck: coming aloft, I could not see a man in whose face there was not written the pale characters of fear & amazement; which were the infallible marks of some sudden and ensuing danger. Upon my first coming on board, I could discern a great many red-nos'd fellows (a drunkards truest *indicium*) but the apprehension of present danger had now extinguisht all those flaming torches of their faces, without the help of water: The faces indeed of the stoutest amongst us, were so altered by this affrightment, that we knew not almost one another; losing our natural complexions, through the extremity of passion. One was at his prayers, that never till then knew what a prayer was; another shedding of *briny tears*, to make room for more *salt waters*: for my own part, I found my self not much moved, having lately made my self acquainted with death. By this time I understood what had past; that is, our Ship had sprung a leak, and was ready to sink. Seeing every man in that posture, and that there required means, as well as prayers for our preservation; Come (said I, Gentlemen) let us not thus cry out, and never lend our assisting hand; let us to the pump, and let every one be imployed in this grand concern. Whereupon we all unanimously fell to work: but as it is usual in such extreams, we were all busie about doing of nothing; what we began we left imperfect, and fell to another, and so perfected nothing to our safety. Some were sent down into the Hold, who quickly returned to us with the symptoms of death in their countenances; for they all with hesitations and quivering of tongue, with words abruptly or half-spoken, signified to us, that our Ships wound was incurable, that the leak

could not be ſtopt, but that we muſt inevitably periſh within ſome minutes. Theſe words I received as from a Deaths-head, which I never heard ſpeak before; and truly his very looks would have ſufficiently declared what meſſage he was about to deliver, *viz.* ruine and immediate deſtruction. Our inexpreſſible fears bereav'd us of the power of counſelling one another; neither did we know what was beſt to be done. Our Maſter commanded our Long-boat to be caſt out, and withal, ordered ſome eight Guns to be fir'd, which methought reſembled ſo many tolls of my *Paſſing-bell*, when I was deſigned to paſs by St. *Sepulchres Church* in a Cart, guarded by fellows whoſe viſages were the true reſemblance of the *Saracens-head* on *Snow-hill*, for terror, horror, and mercileſs proceeding; as to all which, theſe *Canibals* will outvie that inhumane and bloody Nation. Every man indeavoured to ſhift for himſelf, and I among the reſt (being loath to be drowned alone) leapt ſhort of the boat, and fell into the Sea *in Charontis Cymba*; but neceſſity then forcing me to uſe treble diligence to recover my ſelf, with much difficulty I got into the boat: I was no ſooner there, but another leapt down upon me, and had like to have beaten the reſt of my breath out of my body: which I took kindly enough; for I would have been content to have born them all on my back, nay, boat and all, ſo that I might have eſcaped with life. We were conſtrained to leave many of our friends behind us, and committed our ſelves to the Sea, driving us we knew not whether. Now were all our hopes *daſhed*, as well as our ſelves, by the waves; for we were almoſt in deſpair of humane help: for we were left in the wide Ocean, which did not at

that

that time wear a ſmooth brow, but contending with the wind, ſwell'd into prodigious mountains, which every moment threatned our overwhelming. How could we expect ſafety in an open Shaloup, when ſo ſtately a Caſtle of wood, which we but now loſt, could not defend it ſelf, nor preſerve us from the inſolency of the imperious waves? We were many leagues from any ſhore, having neither Compaſs to guide us, nor proviſion to ſuſtain us, being as well ſtarv'd with cold as hunger. Several bags of Money we had with us; but what good could that do us, where there is no exchange? We could neither eat nor drink it; neither would it keep us warm, nor purchaſe our deliverance. Therefore we may juſtly eſteem of Money in its own nature, as an impotent creature, a very cripple, *inutile pondus*, an uſeleſs burden. I could not now imagine any thing could preſerve us, leſs than a miracle; and as we were all ſinful creatures, eſpecially my ſelf, we could not expect that nature ſhould go out of her ordinary way to ſave us. The waves indeed carried us up to Heaven,

Jam jam tacturos ſidera ſumma putes.

yet we could not hope or believe, that our omnipotent Creator ſhould put his hand out of the clouds, and take us poor miſerable Caitiffs unto him from the top of a ſurging billow. *Neptune* ſure at this time was very *gameſome*, for he play'd at *Tennis* with us poor mortals, making a *wave* his *Racket* to bandie us up and down like *Balls*: Sometimes we ſeem'd ſo proud and *lofty*, being raiſed ſo *high*, as if we had been about to *ſcale Heaven*; which the incenſed Deity per-

ceiving, ſeemed again to throw us down headlong to Hell, for too much ambition and preſumption: yet I could not ſee, but that the extremity of our condition pleaded for us, crying aloud for Gods pity and compaſſion. I now was ſilent, committing my ſelf into the hands of Providence; yet verily believing, that the inverſion of the old Proverb appertained to me, that being not born to be hang'd, I ſhould be drown'd. But ſurely my creditor ſeeing me ſilently ſubmit, and conforming my ſelf to his will, pitied my condition. Commonly we are not ſo much mov'd with a clamorous and importunate beggar, who hunts after our Alms with open mouth, and makes Heu and Cry after our Charity (as if we had robbed him who begs of us) as with the ſilence of impotent and diſeaſed *Lazaro*'s: their ſores ſpeak loudeſt to our affections; *Quot vulnera, tot ora*; each wound is as a gaping mouth ſtrenuouſly imploring mercy; the ſight whereof, cannot but melt the moſt obdurate ſpectator into a charitable compaſſion. This was our caſe, our miſery was louder than our prayers, and our deplorable condition, certainly was more prevalent with Almighty God, than our imperfect devotions. In this moment of death, when we were without the leaſt expectation of any deliverance, the winde chopt about, and drove back one Ship that had over-run us: this was unqueſtionably *Digitus Dei*, the immediate finger of God. This Ship made towards us, and we what in us lay, towards it: The winde blew hard, and the inſulting Sea, that will not admit of pity, roſe high upon us; ſo that we were forced to lave the water out of the boat with our hats. It was my chance to ſit on the weather-ſide; fain would I have exchanged my place,

place, but such complements are useless in a storm; so that I was constrained to endure patiently the indignation of my raging enemy. But now began another despair; for, with all our endeavours we could not reach the Ship, nor she us, although she hung on the Lee to retard her course. Thus our pregnant hopes brought forth nothing but winde and water (for the Ship rode on furiously before the winde, and we came after in pursuit of her, as slowly as if an hedge-hog had been running with a Race-horse;) so that we which before flattered our selves with an assurance of safety, were as much confounded with a certainty of perishing. In my opinion, it is better to have no hopes at all, than be disappointed in them: doubtless it did redouble the punishment of *Tantalus*, to touch what he could not taste. That Mariner, who seeing a fatal necessity for it, is contented to die in a tempest, would be exceedingly troubled to perish in a Haven, *In Portu perire.* In this very condition were we, having a Ship near us, but could not board her for stress of weather; so that ruine attended us, though all the while we lookt safety in the face. Now did it grow dark, whereby we could not see which way to row: though this was an evil in its own nature, yet accidentally it became our benefit: for not seeing our danger, we understood it not; but redoubling our strength, we brake through the waves, and by the assistance of a light, which was in the Ship, we directed our course truly; and now did we find we were very neer her. As soon as we toucht her on the Lee-side, the Sea-men, with the rest in the boat, being more dexterous in the art of climbing than my self, never regarding their *exil'd Prisoner*, whom they ought to have

have taken charge of) got all up into the Ship in a moment, leaving me alone in the boat. By good hap they threw me out a Rope, which once had like to have deprived me of my life, but was now the preſerver; which I held faſt, to keep the boat from ſtaving off. Our boat was half full of water, and the waves daſht it ſo violently againſt the Ship-ſide, that every ſuch ſtroke ſtruck me down, ſo that I had like to have been drowned (and did much fear it) in that epitome of the Sea. It would have vexed a man in my condition, to eſcape by ſwimming over a large *River*, and coming aſhore, to be drowned in a *waſh-bowl*. At laſt with much difficulty I got aboard too. The Maſter, Merchants, *&c.* having ſav'd their lives (even miraculouſly) one would have thought they ſhould not have been ſo penſive as they were for the loſs of their goods. Thoſe which loſt much, took it very heavily; thoſe which loſt leſs, their affliction was greater, having loſt all: I was the moſt glad, joy riding in triumph in my chearful countenance, having loſt nothing, neither could I any thing, but my life. Having eſcapt ſo miraculouſly, it was unchriſtian-like to murmur at any loſs; and as ridiculous, as if *Lazarus* being reſtored to life, ſhould complain that his winding-ſheet had ſuſtained ſome damage by lying four days in the grave, and condemn his friends for fools, in unadviſedly ſpending the ointments and ſpices at his Funeral. The Ship wherein we were, was bound for the *Canaries*, the winde blowing very fair for that coaſt. The ſecond night after our deliverance, about ten a clock, having ſet our Watch, we laid our ſelves down to reſt, with the thoughts of much ſafety and ſecurity, but it was otherwiſe decreed; for about one

one a clock we were forced to uſe all hands *aloft*, a moſt terrible ſtorm beginning to ariſe, and the wind blew ſo furiouſly, that before morning we loſt our Bow-ſprit and Mizon: we durſt not bear the leaſt ſayl, but let the Ship drive whither the winde and waves pleaſed; and before the next night, we could not indure our remaining Maſts ſtanding, but were neceſſitated to cut them by the board. Thus we were tumbled up and down for four dayes, and as many nights, contending with the waves in a *Pitcht-battel*, not knowing where we were, till our Ship ſtruck ſo violently againſt a Rock, that the horrid noiſe thereof would have even made a dead man ſtartle; to which, add the hideous cries of the Sea-men, bearing a part with the whiſtling windes and roaring Sea; all which together, ſeemed to me to be the trueſt Repreſentation of the Day of Judgement. The Ship ſtuck faſt ſo long between two Rocks, as that we had time enough, all of us, to leap out; the only means left us for our ſafety. We all got upon a Rock, and the Morning-ſtar having drawn the Curtain of the night, we found that we were a very little diſtance from the ſhore; getting thereon, and ranging to and fro, we at laſt eſpied a ſmall houſe, the ſight whereof made us direct our foot-ſteps thither, ſteering our courſe ſolely by the compaſs of our eyes: being come to the houſe, the Maſter thereof ſtood at the door; we addreſt our ſelves to him in *Engliſh*, but his replications were in *Spaniſh*, which we underſtood not: wherefore I ſpake to him in Latine, in which language he anſwered me, *Tam compte, tam prompte*, both quaintly and readily. In that tongue I made a ſhift to tell him the ſad Illiades of our misfortunes. This noble

ble *Spaniard* underſtood it better by our looks, than my relations; which made ſuch a deep impreſſion in his ſoul, that his *gravity* could not forbear the ſhedding of ſome few tears, ſo that one would have thought he ſuffered Shipwrack as well as we. He deſired us to come into his houſe, and refreſh our ſelves: what little meat he had, ſtew'd in a horſe-load of herbs, with ſome pottage onely ſeaſoned by a piece of Bacon, that had ſerv'd for that purpoſe at leaſt a dozen times, he ordered to be ſet before us; being no wayes ſparing of his wine, better than any I ever yet could taſte in Taverns; this good man being not acquainted with *diſhings*, *dulcifyings*, &c. Seeing us eat ſo heartily, he cauſed another diſh to be provided, which was compoſed of ſuch variety of creatures, that I thought he had ſerved us in as a *Meſs*, *the firſt Chapter of Geneſis*: This *Olla-podridra* was ſo *cookt*, that the diſtinction of each creature was *ſauc'd* out of our knowledge. Having ſatisfied our hungry ſtomachs he diſmiſt all, excepting my ſelf, deſiring me to accept of what kindneſs he could do me, for he confeſt he took much pleaſure in my ſociety and diſcourſe. I was very well contented to entertain his proffer: in ſome few dayes he told me he was to go to Sea, being Captain of a Veſſel that lay in *Perimbana*, a ſmall Sea-faring Town near the place of our Shipwrack; and asking me whether I would go with him to the *Indies* (whither he was bound,) I readily conſented, and in ſome few dayes after we did ſail from thence, to perfect our intended Voyage.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLI.

From Perimbana, *a ſmall maritine Town on the* Spaniſh *coaſt, he ſets ſail with Captain* Ferdinando Velaſquez *bound to the* East-Indies; *but by the way meets with three Turkiſh Galleys, and by them is taken, miſerably abuſed and impriſoned.*

AN hour before day we left the Port, and ſailed along the coaſt before the winde; about noon we diſcerned three veſſels, whereupon we gave them chaſe: in leſs than two hours we got up to them, and then we could eaſily perceive that they were Turkiſh Galleys; whereof we were no ſooner aſſured, but we betook our ſelves to flight, making to Land with all ſpeed poſſible, to avoid the danger that inevitably threatned us. The *Turks* underſtanding our deſign, preſently hoiſted up all their ſails, and having the wind favourable, bore up to us ſo cloſe, and getting within a ſmall Faulcon-ſhot of us, they diſcharged their Ordnance on us, wherewith they killed eight of our men, and wounded as many more; and ſo battered our Ship beſide, that we were forc'd to throw a great quantity of our lading over-board. The *Turks* in the mean while loſt no time, but grappled us; we on the other ſide, who were able to fight, knowing that on our valour and undaunted courage depended our lives, or loſs of liberty, with perpetual ſlavery, reſolved to fight it out. With this determination we boarded their Admiral, doing very eminent execution;

tion; but being over-powered with numbers, we were ſo overpreſt and wearied, that we deſiſted from making any further reſiſtance: For, of 35 men we had at firſt, we only had remaining ten, whereof two died the next day, whom the *Turks* cauſed to be cut in pieces or quarters, which they hung at the end of their Main-yard for a ſign of Victory. Being taken, we were carried by them to a Town called *Mocaa*, and received by the Governour and Inhabitants, who expected and waited the coming of theſe Pirates. In the company was likewiſe one of the chiefeſt Sacerdotal dignity; and becauſe he had been a little before in Pilgrimage at the Temple of their Prophet *Mahomet* in *Meca*, he was honoured and eſteemed by all the people as a very holy man. This Mahometan Impoſtor rid in a triumphant Charriot up and down the Town, covered all over with ſilk Tapiſtry, and with a deal of ceremonious fopperies beſtowed on the people his benediction as he paſſed along, exhorting them to return hearty thanks to their great Prophet for this Victory obtained over us. The Inhabitants hearing that we were Chriſtians taken Captives, flockt about us; and being exceedingly tranſported with choler, fell to beating of us in that cruel manner, that I thought it a vain thing to hope to eſcape alive out of their hands; and all this, becauſe we owned the names of Chriſtians. When I was in *England*, I juſtly was ſentenced to die for my villany, and now here only for the bare profeſſion of Chriſtianity, I muſt not be ſuffered to live. This wicked *Cacis* (as they called him) inſtigated them on to thoſe outrages they committed; who made them believe, that the worſe they dealt with us, the more favour and mercy they

ſhould

ſhould receive from *Mahomet* hereafter. We were chained all together, and in that manner were we led in triumph; and as we paſt along, we had our heads waſht with womens Roſe-water, thrown down upon us from Balconies, with other filth, in deriſion and contempt of the name of Chriſtian; wherein every one ſtrived to be moſt forward, being inſtigated thereunto by their Prieſt. My ſufferings then, put me in mind of my former wiſhes, to be as unfortunate *Andronicus*, miſerably afflicted here, that I might eſcape eternal torments hereafter: I received in part the effect of my *quondam* wiſhes, no ways acceptable to my preſent deſires. Having tyred themſelves in tormenting us till the evening, bound as we were, they clapt us into the Dungeon, where we remained 21 dayes expoſed to all kind of miſery, having no other proviſion allowed us then a little Oat-meal or Rice and water, which was diſtributed to us every morning, what ſhould ſerve us for that whole day: for variety ſake, we had ſometimes a ſmall quantity of Peaſe ſoak'd in water.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLII.

He is brought forth into the Market-place, and there put to ſale; he is bought by a Jew *(a miſerable avaricious man) and by a ſtratagem he delivers himſelf from that Maſter, is ſold to a* Græcian, *in heart a Chriſtian: the Ship being taken, and his Maſter drowned, he eſcaping to ſhore by ſwimming, is at his own liberty.*

IN the morning the Goaler repairing to us, found two of our miſerable companions dead, by reaſon of their wounds, which were many, and not lookt unto. This made him haſte to the *Guazil* or Judge, to acquaint him of what had happened; who upon information given, came to the priſon in perſon, attended with Officers and other people: where having cauſed their irons to be ſtruck off, he ordered their bodies to be dragged thorow the Town, and ſo caſt in the Sea. We that remained were chained all together, and ſo led out of priſon unto the common place of ſale, to be ſold to him that ſhould give moſt. By reaſon of my ſtrength (which thoſe that lookt on me might argue, from the ſtreightneſs and firmneſs of my limbs, being elevated by the Pole above a common or middle ſtature) I was firſt bought by one, whom at the firſt ſight, I could not well tell whether he was Man or Devil; for his complexion was of the ſame colour as the Devil is uſually rendred: to ſay all in ſhort, he was a *Jew*. He carried me home to his houſe, where I no ſooner arrived, but he markt me for his own:

My

My employment constant was to turn a hand-mill; if I rested at any time, though ever so little, the punishment he inflicted on me was, three or four blows on either the belly or soals of my feet; which were doubled or trebled according as he judged of my offence; my diet was such as only served to keep me alive. In general, he used me so cruelly, that becoming desperate, I once thought it better resolutely to cut the thread of my life, than spin it out longer in so much wretchedness and misery. Revenge too induc'd me to the undertaking of this attempt, as knowing him to be the most covetous wretch living, and therefore would even hang himself when he should lose what he payed for me: but reconsidering my self, I made choice of a better expedient, which was to pretend (what I intended not) to kill my self. I made choice of such a time, when I was sure some one or other was set to watch me; who perceiving that I was about to destroy my self, rusht in and prevented me, and went forthwith to inform my Master of what he had seen; advising him withall, to sell me out of hand, otherwise he would infallibly be a loser by my. My Master taking notice of my countenance and behaviour, resolved to put his friends counsel in practise, and so sold me to another, who fortunately proved a Greek, that in shew was a *Mahometan*, but cordially a Christian. Once more was I delivered from miseries that are hardly to be endured, and was imbarqued with my new Master in a Ship bound for the *East-Indies*. In the course that we held, we sailed with so prosperous a gale, that in a very short time we arrived in view of the Fort of *Diu*; but seeing several vessels lying before that Fort, firing against it in an hostle manner, we

ſhaped our courſe to *Goa*, where we arrived in ſafety. From hence we ſayled into the River *Lugor*: juſt as we were entring its Mouth, we ſaw a great *Junk* coming upon us, which perceiving us to be few in number, and our Veſſel but ſmall, fell cloſe with our Prow on the Larboard-ſide, and then thoſe that were in her, threw in to us great Cramp-irons faſtned unto two long chains, wherewith they grappled us faſt unto them; which they had no ſooner done, but incontinently ſome ſeventy or eighty *Mahometans* ſtarted out from under the Hatches, that till then had lain lurking there; and pouring out their ſmall-ſhot upon us, clapt us aboard in an inſtant. Thoſe that knew what it was to be a ſlave to the mercileſs *Turks*, leapt into the Sea, whereof I was one: we were not far from land, ſo that it was not long before I got ſafe to ſhore; it was my Maſters misfortune (and truly I think my unhappineſs, for he behaved himſelf to me as to one of his familiar friends) being wounded, and ignorant in ſwimming, to be entomb'd in the deep. There were ſome five or ſix more that eſcapt the danger of their enemies and the Sea, that wading up to the Waſte in mud, landed in ſafety; with theſe I hid my ſelf in the next adjacent Wood. There was hardly one of us but received ſome hurt; and being now diveſted of all hope of help, we could not forbear to unman our ſelves by weeping, complaining againſt our hard deſtiny, that ſhould in ſo ſhort a time bring us into ſo ſad a diſaſter. In this deſolation we ſpent the remaining tragical part of the day; but conſidering with our ſelves, that the place was mooriſh, and full of venemous creatures, we betook our ſelves to the *Owze*, ſtanding therein up to the middle. The next morning,

morning, by break of day, we went along by the River-side, until we came to a little Channel, which we durst not pass (not knowing its depth) for fear of Lizards, plenty whereof we had sight of therein: we wandred so long to avoid this and the Bogs covered with rushes, which environed us about, till that we were forced to rest our selves, being so weary and so hungry, that we could not go one step farther. In the morning awaking, four of our company lay dead, so that there was onely one remaining to bear me company: I now thought my condition worse than if I had hung at *Tyburn*, surrounded with a full Jury of fellow-sufferers: my companion and I, with tears, sang the obsequies of our dead friends, expecting hourly our own dissolution: Their bodies we covered with a little earth, as well as we could; for we were then so feeble, that we could hardly stir, nay, nor speak. In this place we rested our selves, intending to bear our friends company to their eternal rest. Some four hours after this our resolution, about Sun-set, we espied a Barque rowing up the River: coming near us, we hailed her, and prostrating our selves on the ground, beseeched those that were in her to receive us on board. Amazed to see us in that posture, on our bended knees, and hands lifted up to Heaven, they stopt: Our cries for succor reacht their eares, which obtained commiseration from their hearts; so taking us in, they carried us with them to *Lugor*, where about Noon next day we landed. The people are fearful black like the Devil, whom they superstitiously worship, in the form of a bloody Dragon: They have many Idols amongst them which they hold in great esteem, as a Ram-goat, a Bat, an

Owl, a Snake, or Dog, to whom they ceremoniouſly bow or kneel, groveling upon the earth, and throwing duſt on their faces; they offer Rice, Roots, Herbs, and the like, which is devoured by the Witches, theſe deviliſh creatures being both feared and eſteemed by the Savages. The female ſex, againſt the appearing of the New-moon, aſſemble upon a Mountain, where turning up their bare bums, they contemptuouſly defie the Queen of Heaven, who hath this deſpight ſhewn her, becauſe they ſuppoſe her the cauſer of their monthly-courſes. They are much given to novelties, amongſt which dogs are of very great value with them: Inſomuch, that whilſt I was there, I ſaw ſix ſlaves exchanged for one *Europæan* Cur. They abound with the choiceſt of natures bleſſings, as health, ſtrength, and wealth, but are very inhumane and uncivil; for they delight much to feed on mans fleſh, eating it with more ſatisfaction than any other food. Upon my firſt arrival, I did not rightly underſtand their meaning by feeling my fleſh, but when I was informed, that like Butchers, they felt my flank to know how fat I was, they never toucht me afterwards with their fingers, but I fancied my ſelf either boiled or roaſted, and that their hands, my bearers, were conveying me to the open Sepulchres of their mouths, to be entombed in the gut-rumbling Monument of their bellies: whereas other Anthropophagi eoment their appetites with the fleſh of their enemies, theſe covet moſt their friends, whom they imbowel with much greedineſs, ſaying, they can no way better expreſs a true affection, than to incorporate their deareſt friends and relations into themſelves, as in love before, now in body, uniting two in one (in my opinion)

opinion) a bloody ſophiſtry. It is a very truth, of which I was an eye-witneſs, they have Shambles of men and womens fleſh, joynted and cut into ſeveral pieces fit for dreſſing. It is uſual for ſome, either weary of life, or ſo ſick they have no hopes of recovery, to proffer themſelves to theſe inhumane Butchers, who returning them thanks, diſſect or cut them out into ſmall parcels, and ſo are ſodden and eaten. It is a cuſtom among them, when they would add to their beauties (deformity) to flaſh their faces in ſeveral places. They adore thoſe two glorious Planets, the Sun and Moon, believing they live in Matrimony. They are much addicted to rapine and theevery, and they chuſe to commit any villany rather by day than night, becauſe they ſuppoſe thereby the Moon and Stars will never give teſtimony againſt them. Their heads are long, and their hair curled, ſeeming rather wool than hair: Their ears are very long, being extended by ponderous bawbles they hang there, ſtretching the holes to a great capacity. Both men and women hideouſly flaſh their fleſh in ſundry forms; their brows, noſes, cheeks, arms, breaſts, back, belly, thighs and legs, are pinkt, and cut in more admirable (than amiable) manner. They contemn apparel, and, indeed, the heat of the Climate will not permit them, to wear any; very few have nothing on to cover their ſecrets. Moſt have but one ſtone, the other is forced away in their infancy, that *Venus* may not too much allure them from Martial exploits: wherefore the women take great delight in ſtrangers. One of them ſo ſtrongly beſieged my modeſty, that more for fear than love, I yielded to her incontinency: I was diſpleaſed at nothing but the ſight of her; for her fleſh,

no Velvet could be ſofter. There are in this place great quantity of Lions, which in dark weather uſe great ſubtilty to catch and eat ſome Savages: They again in the day-time dig pits, and covering them with boughs, do train the couragious Lions thither, where they receive deſtruction, eating them to day, who perhaps were Sepulchres to their friends or parents the day before. I have ſeen theſe well-bred people deſcend in a morning from the Mountains, adorned with the raw guts of Lions or other wilde beaſts, ſerving for an hour or two for chains or neck-laces, and afterwards for their breakfaſt; of which good chear, if I would not participate, I might faſt for them: ſo that my ſqueamiſh ſtomack was forc'd to give entertainment to that unwelcome gueſt, to keep ſtarving out of doors. The Ship that brought us hither, was now ready to ſet ſail, being bound for *Goa*, the Maſter whereof was a *Portugal*, who underſtood Latine and French very well, of which I was not ignorant: I addreſt my ſelf to him in the French tongue, deſiring him to accept of mine and my Comerades ſervice; which he condeſcended to with much willingneſs. At *Goa* we ſtayed not long, but from thence paſſing towards *Surrat*, a vehement and unexpected ſtorm overtook us, for three dayes raging inceſſantly, ſo that thoſe which were acquainted with thoſe parts, very much feared an *Hero-cane*, a tempeſt commonly of thirty dayes continuance, and of ſuch fury, that Ships, Trees, and Houſes periſh unavoidably in it: once in nine years, it ſeems, it fails not to viſit them. It chanc'd, that my Comerade being heedleſs and unexperienc'd in Sea-affairs, was waſht off by a wave into the Sea, and ſo was buried in the large and

deep

deep grave of the vaſt Ocean; a ſure treaſury for the reſurrection. The foulneſs of the weather forc'd a *Junk*-man of War, full of deſperate *Malabars*, a bloody and warlike people, in view of us; but the Seas were too lofty for them to board us. After three watches the Sea changed colour, and was calmer; and by the ſwimming of many ſnakes about our Veſſel, the Sea-men knew we were not far from ſhore, landing ſhortly after ſafely at *Surrat*.

CHAP. XLII.

From hence he ſet ſail to Swalley-Road, *and ſo from thence coaſted till he arrived at* Delyn, *a Town that belongs to the* Malabars: *he gives an account of what he there ſaw and obſerved.*

SOme two hours after we ſet ſail, we were becalmed, having not the leaſt breeze of winde, the weather withall being exceeding hot and ſultry: at length we arrived in *Swalley-Road*, where was riding an Engliſh Veſſel; there we caſt anchor, the Engliſh men came aboard of us, whom our Captain welcomed with the beſt of his entertainment. I could not forbear imbracing my dear Country-men, ſhewing them ſo many demonſtrations of joy, that by their looks, they ſeemed to queſtion whether I was in my right wits. Their Maſters-mate calling me aſide, askt me, how I came to be ingaged in this Veſſel? how long ſince I came from *England*? with many other queſtions too tedious here to relate. To all which I gave him ſuch ſatisfactory anſwers, that he ſeemed very well pleaſed. I gave him a ſummary relation of what I had ſuffer'd, ſince my departure from my own Country; the report whereof, ſeemed to extract much pity from him. In fine, I told him, I had a great deſire to ſee *England* again, and to that end deſired him to make uſe of what intereſt he could, to remove me into their Ship: he promiſed he would; and accordingly giving a Preſent to our Captain, he

ſo

ſo far prevailed upon him to let me go, and perſwaded the chief of whom he was concerned withal, to entertain me, which they did with much willingneſs. I was ſo like a Sea-man in this ſhort time, that none could diſtinguiſh me from one that received his firſt rocking in a Ship. I carried about me as deep an hoguo of Tarpawlin as the beſt of them, and there was no term of art belonging to any part of the Ship or tackling, but what I underſtood. I could drink water that ſtunk (as if *ſtercus humanum* had been ſteept two or three days in it) as well as any of them, and eat beef and porke (that ſtirred as if it had received a ſecond life, and was crawling out of the platter to ſeek out the reſt of his Members) I ſay, I could devour it with as much greedineſs (ſcorning that my appetite ſhould be ever again taxed with any of thoſe Epithetes, either nice or ſqueamiſh) as if it had been but nine hours, inſtead of nine Months, in ſalt. And to make me the more compleat, I had forgot to waſh either hands or face, or what the uſe of a comb or ſhirt was; neither did I know how to undreſs my ſelf; or if wet to the skin, to make uſe of any other means than my natural heat to dry my ſelf: I never lookt on a hat or band, but as Prodigies. But to return to my purpoſe, where I left off. In three days time we ſet ſail for *Swalley-Road*, ſteering our courſe from them all along the coaſt of *India*, *Decan*, and *Malabar*. I knew not whither they intended, neither did I care now, as thinking my ſelf ſafe, being amongſt my friends: on the 20 of *April*, ſeven days from our weighing anchor in *Swalley-Road*, we came to an anchor at *Delyn*, a Town of the *Malabars*: We durſt not land, the people being ſo treacherous and bloody;

yet

yet we ſuffered them to come aboard us in their ſmall Canoos, ſelling us for any trifles, Coco-nuts, Jacks, Green-pepper, Indian-peaſe, Hens, Eggs, and the like. They brought us likewiſe Oranges of ſo pleaſant a taſte, the rinde vying with the juice, which ſhall become moſt grateful to the palate: We had likewiſe from them Plantanes, a fruit ſuppoſed by ſome, to be that which *Eve* was tempted withal; if a man gathers them green, yet will they ripen afterwards, coloured with a dainty yellow: the rinde or skin will peel off with much facility; they melt in the mouth, giving a moſt delicious taſte and reliſh. Theſe *Malabars* are coal-black, well limb'd, their hair long and curled; about their heads they only tye a ſmall piece of linnen, but about their bodies nothing but a little cloth which covers their ſecrets. Notwithſtanding their cruelty and inhumanity, we man'd out our long-boat, and 15, whereof I was one, went aſhore, carrying ſome Muskets and Swords with us, ſuſpecting the worſt: Landing, they fled from us, but not without ſending good ſtore of poyſoned arrows and darts amongſt us. It is no wonder that theſe people are ſo black, for they live under the ſcorching fire of the torrid Zone. We returned to our Ship, finding it no way ſafe to ſtay here longer; next morning hoiſing ſail, we came to *Canavar*, where we met with people more civil, whereupon we landed; and receiving things from the inhabitants of conſiderable value, for toys and trifles we gave them in lieu, we reſolved to ſtay here a while. The better ſort of theſe people are call'd *Nairo's*, whoſe heads are cover'd with a low Tulipant, and their middles with a party-coloured Plad, reſembling a Scotch Plad: The poorer ſort have nothing

thing but a ſmall vail over their privities, wholly naked elſewhere; which vail or flap the women in courteſie will turn aſide, and ſhew a man their *Pudenda*, by way of gratitude for any courteſie received, as if they would render ſatisfaction with that, which could never receive plenary ſatisfaction it ſelf. They have a ſtrange cuſtom in their Marriages, obſerved among them by the higheſt to the loweſt: who ſo marrieth, is not to have the firſt nights imbraces with his Bride, but is very well contented to beſtow her Maiden-head on the *Bramini*, or Prieſts, who do not always enjoy it, being glutted with ſuch frequent offerings, and therefore will many times ſell them to ſtrangers. Such a proffer I had once made me, and with ſhame I muſt confeſs, I did accept it, forgetting thoſe ſacred vows I made in *Newgate*, to live a more pious, ſtrict and ſober life. The Bride that night, was plac'd in one of their Fanes, as it is cuſtomary, the Prieſt or *Bramin* coming to her; but inſtead thereof, according to agreement between this Prieſtly Paynim and my ſelf, I went: I wondred to find her ſo low of ſtature, but I did not much matter it then, minding ſomething elſe; which having performed, I departed. The next morning I had a great deſire to ſee her, but was amazed to ſee her ſo young, believing it impoſſible (though I knew the contrary) a child (for I may ſo call her, being but ſeven years of age) could be capable of mans reception at that tender age. Afterwards, I was informed, it was uſual for them to marry ſo ſoon; firſt, being extreamly ſalacious and leacherous, and as fit, nay, as prone to enjoy man at that age, as *Europæans* at fourteen next, they extreamly honour Wedlock, inſomuch, that if any of

their

their children die whilſt very young, they will hire ſome Maiden to be married to him, and ſo lie with him the night after his deceaſe. So ſoon as we arrived (which is a cuſtom they uſe to all ſtrangers, of what Country ſoever) we had preſented us choice of many Virgins; our Boat-ſwain chuſing one he fancied for a ſmall price, ſhe guided him to a lodging, where if he would have ſtayed ſo long, ſhe would have performed his domeſtick affairs, as well at board as bed, dicharging her duty very punctually: but he that undertakes any ſuch thing, muſt be very wary that he be not venereally familiar with any other woman, leſt that ſhe with whom he hath contracted himſelf for ſuch a time, doth recompence his inconſtancy with mortal poyſon. At his departure, her wages muſt be paid to her Parents, who returns then with much joy, and they receive her with as much credit and oſtentation. The chiefeſt among them hold it a very great courteſie, if any one will ſave them the labour, pain and trouble, by accepting the Hymeneal rites of his Bride. I ſhould have told the Reader, that the *Bramins* are ſo much reſpected and eſteemed by the commonalty, that if any of them gets their wives or daughters with child, they believe that off-ſpring to be much holier than their own, being extracted from Pagan piety. Their Funerals they celebrate after this manner: Bringing the dead corpſe near to their Fanes or Churches, they conſume it to aſhes, by fire made of ſweet ſmelling wood, unto which they add coſtly perfumes in Aromatick gums and ſpices: If the wife only (for here they will not hear of Polygamy) caſt not her ſelf into the flames voluntarily, they look upon her to be ſome common proſtitute, having not any

thing

thing commendable in her natural diſpoſition; but if ſhe freely commits her ſelf to the flames, with her husbands carcaſe, ſhe from that noble act (for ſo it is eſteemed of among theſe infidels) derives to her memory, reputation and glory amongſt her ſurviving friends and kindred. They are deluded on to this reſolution by their *Bramins*, who perſwade them by ſo doing, they ſhall enjoy variety of perpetual pleaſures, in a place that is never diſturbed by alteration of weather, wherein night is baniſht, there being a continual ſpring; neither is there wanting any thing that ſhall raviſh each individual ſenſe. This was at firſt a ſtratagem invented by ſome long-headed Politician, to divert them from murdering their husbands (which they were frequently guilty of, by reaſon of their extream leachery and inſatiate venery) ſo by that means they were reduc'd to that good order, as that they tendered the preſervation of their husbands healths and lives equally with their own. For my part, I could wiſh the like cuſtom enjoyn'd on all married Engliſh females (for the love I bear to my own Country) which I am confident would prevent the deſtruction of thouſands of well-meaning Chriſtians, which receive a full ſtop in the full carreer of their lives, either by corrupting their bodies by venemous medicaments adminiſtred by ſome pretended Doctors hand (it may be her Stallion) unto which he is eaſily perſwaded, by the good opinion he hath of his wifes great care and affection for him: or elſe his body is poyſoned by ſucking or drawing in the contagious fumes which proceed from her contaminated body, occaſion'd by uſing pluralities for her venereal ſatisfaction, and ſo dies of the new Conſumption. Or Laſtly,

by

by her pettiſh and petulant behaviour, ſhe wearieth him of his life, and at laſt is willing to die, that he may be freed, not only from the clamorous noiſe of her tongue, but that the deriſion of his neighbours, and ſcandal that ſhe hath brought upon him, may not reach his ears. That all ſuch might be mindful of their duty, I would have (were it at my diſpoſing) theſe two lines fixt as a *Motto* to their doors.

A Couchant Cuckold, and a rampant Wife,
Are Cop'latives disjunctive all their life.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLIV.

From Delyn *he ſailed to* Zeyloon; *with what he there obſerved.*

THe Iſle of *Zeyloon* is very famous, and not far diſtant from the Point of *India*, called *Cape Comrein*; it abounds with all ſorts of odoriferous and Aromatical Spices; the people are Pagans, not owning a Deity: ſome though have heard of Chriſt, and others of *Mahomet*, but ſuch are rarely to be found. They go naked, not compelled thereunto by want or poverty, but meer heat of the Sun. They are great Idolaters, worſhipping things in monſtrous ſhapes. On the top of a high Mountain, they have ſet conſpicuouſly the Idæa of an horrible *Caco-Dæmon*, unto which Pilgrims from remote parts do reſort; and upon this account, a King of *Zeyloon* coming, once derided this Idol: another time, intending to make a ſecond repitition of his former deriſion, the King was even frighted out of his wits; for not onely he, but his attendants all ſaw how this *Dæmon* threatned him for ſo doing, by ſhaking a flaming Cymeter, and rowling his fiery eyes, from his mouth gaping, iſſued out fiery flames; whereat this King returns with as much penitence as amazement, reſolving by his due reſpect and worſhip for the time to come, to make an atonement for his former errors. For my part, had I not believed there was a Devil, the ſight of this horrid monſtrous repreſentation would have induc'd me into the belief that this was one really. They have in another place a Chappel, in which they adore the

Devil

Devil (whom they call *Deumo*) the height whereof is about three yards, and uncovered: the wooden entrance is engraven with helliſh ſhapes; within, their beloved Devil or *Deumo*, is enthronized on a brazen Mount: From his head iſſue four great horns, his eyes of an indifferent proportionable bigneſs, having ſomewhat a larger circumference than two ſawcers; his noſe flat; a mouth like a portcullice, beautified with four tuſks, like Elephants teeth; his hands like claws, and his feet not unlike a Monkeys: beſide him ſtand leſſer *Deumo*'s attending on this grand *Pagod*, ſome whereof are repreſented or pictured devouring ſouls. Every morning the Prieſt waſheth them, not departing till he hath craved their malediction; and when he takes his leave, he is very careful of offending the Devil by ſhewing his poſteriors, and therefore goes from him retrograde, ſtedfaſtly fixing his eyes on the Idol. 'Tis ſtrange that a rational ſoul ſhould be ſo much infatuated, as to adore ſuch a monſtrous and ridiculous thing. The people in way of mutual love and amity, uſe to exchange their wives; a thing, though much hated by the jealous *Spaniard*, yet would be very acceptable to other *Europæans*, or elſe to be rid of them altogether, who are the daily murderers of their content and quiet. Polygamy, or plurality of Wives, is here permitted; and as the men are granted the liberty to have more than one wife, ſo are the women allowed more than one husband. However, the woman hath the diſpoſal left her of her children, giving them to him ſhe hath the greateſt affection for; which he receives, not queſtioning his intereſt or right (by generation) unto the infant.

Elſe-

Elſewhere the Fates decreed a Cuckold's lot,
To keep that child another man begot;
And by his joy therein he plainly ſhows,
He thanks the man that pay'd thoſe debts he owes:
But theſe She-Blacks *in juſtice thought it fit,*
That he which got the child, likewiſe keep it:
Therefore both love and cuſtom made it ſo,
On the true Father they the child beſtow:
By which good Law unto each man's known,
That he doth keep no other child but's own.
Were this obſerv'd in England, *I durſt ſwear,*
Some what-d'ye-lacks *would Heirs to Lords appear;*
And half of what ſome own, muſt be conferr'd
On ſuch who have a Fathers name deſerv'd.
Theſe Blacks *do tax our women, for they paint*
The Devil white, and make him ſeem a Saint;
To let them know, they are far greater evils;
For faireſt females oft are fouleſt Devils.

We ſtayed not long here, but having diſpatcht what we came for, we ſailed along the coaſt of *Choromandel*, and landed at *Meliapor*. The people are much after the ſame complexion of thoſe of *Delyn*, only a little more duskie, and go in a manner naked too. Here are likewiſe great ſtore of *Bramins*, who are very buſie and induſtrious to inſtruct theſe poor ignorant ſouls in the perfect way to damnation; for which they have the honour and eſtimation of all conferred upon them. We man'd out our long-boat and went aſhore; upon our landing, it was our hap to be eye-witneſſes of one of their Funerals, which was performed after this manner. The husband was car-

ried before the combuſtible Pile; his moſt dearly loving wife cloſely following after him, attended by her Parents and children; muſick (ſuch as they have, which I cannot compare to that of the Sphears) playing before, behind, & on each ſide of her. She was dreſt both neatly and ſumptuouſly, to the height of the rudeneſs of their art; her head, neck, and arms (not omitting her noſe, legs, and toes) each bedeckt and charged with Bracelets of ſilver, with jewels every where about her diſtributed: She carried flowers in her hands, which ſhe diſpoſed of to thoſe ſhe met. The Prieſt going backwards before her, ſhewed her a magical glaſs, which repreſented to her ſight whatever might be pleaſing to her ſenſual appetite. The *Bramin* all along inculcating to her thoughts, the ſenſe-raviſhing and affable joys ſhe ſhall poſſeſs after her deceaſe; at which this poor deluded ſoul ſmiled, and ſeemed to be much tranſported. We followed them till they came to the fire, which was made of ſweet odoriferous wood. As ſoon as her dead husband was committed to the flames, ſhe voluntarily leapt in after him, incorporating her ſelf with the fire, and his aſhes: we wondred that the ſtanders-by would permit her thus to deſtroy her ſelf, imagining this raſh action proceeded from the ardency of her affection; but perceiving her friends to throw in after her, jewels and many precious things, with much exultation and expreſſions of joy, we concluded this to be the effects of cuſtom. Such as refuſe to burn in this manner, are immediately ſhaven, and are hourly in danger to be murdered by their own iſſue or kindred, looking upon them as ſtrumpets: and indeed many of them are ſo audaciouſly impudent, that upon the leaſt di-

ſtaſte,

ſtaſte, or not having their luxurious expectations anſwered, nothing more intended or indeavoured than the lives of their husbands. They are in theſe parts ſo extreamly idolatrous, and ſo over-ſwayed by the Devil, that they adore a great Idol made of Copper gilded, whoſe ſtatue is carried up and down, mounted on a glorious Charriot, with eight very large wheels overlayed with gold; the aſcent or ſteps to the charriot are very large and capacious, on which ſit the Prieſts, attended by little young girles, who for devotion ſake, proſtitute themſelves freely to the heat of any libidinous ſpectator; for ſo doing, they are intitled the *Pagodes* children: A very ſtrange zeal in their bewitched or beſotted Parents, to deſtinate the off-ſpring of their bodies, from their non-age, to ſuch an abominable liberty; for by letting them know the uſe of Man ſo ſoon, it cannot but be very prejudicial to their bodies, but alſo inveſt them with the thoughts of perpetual whoring: For, that woman that ſhall admit of more than one to her private imbraces, will admit of any upon the like account. Nay, ſuch is their blind zeal and ſuperſtition, that as the Charriot paſſeth, ſome will voluntarily throw themſelves under the wheels, who are cruſht in pieces by the weight of the Idol and its attendants, ſuffering death without the benefit of a happy (but to them unhappy) Martyrdom.

CHAP. XLV.

From Zeyloon, *he arrived at* Syam; *and what there he ſaw and obſerved.*

Syam is a Kingdom contiguous to *Pegu*, a part of the *Eaſt-Indies*: And, as the people are included within the burning Zone, therefore far from being fair; yet are tall of ſtature, very ſtrong and valiant, and generally ſo ſtrait, that few are found among them crooked. Formerly they were much given to *Sodomy*: to prevent which, 'twas wiſely ordered, (though ſtrangely) that the males as ſoon as born, ſhould have a bell of gold (and in it a dry'd Adders tongue) put through the prepuce and fleſh. When the deſire of copulation ſtimulates any of them, he preſents himſelf to ſome expert Midwives; who adviſe him to drink *Opium*, or ſome ſuch ſomniferous potion; which having done in their preſence, he falls aſleep; during which interval, they remove the bell, and apply to the orifice from whence it was taken, an unguent, which affords a ſpeedy cure: then is he free to make uſe of ſuch as his fancy leads him to. The young Girles are ſerved in a worſe manner; for as ſoon as born, their *Pudenda* is ſowed up, and only a ſmall *foramen* or paſſage left, as an *aqueduct*: about eight or nine ſhe is unſtitcht; and it is as great a rarity, to finde a pure Virgin here at ten years old, as to finde a Maid at fixteen, in moſt places of *France*, or its neighbouring Countreys. And that theſe young leacherous Fry may be capable of that employment they are deſtinated unto, they have po-

tions

tions given them to drink, which have the efficacious power as to diſtend their *muliebria* to ſuch a capacity, as that (if their bells were not withdrawn) their males would finde too eaſie an entrance. The women here (ſtill the more to allure the men from that deteſtable and unnatural act of *Sodomy*) go naked; (as little a novelty in theſe parts, as for *Iriſh* and *Scotch* to waſh their cloaths with their feet, their coats, ſmock and all tuckt up about their middles, though twenty men ſtand by as (deriding) ſpectators) I ſay, they go naked to their middles, where the better ſort are covered with a fine tranſparent Taffata, or dainty Lawn, which by a cunning device is ſo made to open, that as they paſs along, the leaſt air diſcovers all, to all mens immodeſt views; making viſible to the eye, that which (though moſt deſired) cannot but be loathſome to the ſight. Their Prieſts, which they call *Tallapoi*, are ſeeming very zealouſly ſuperſtitious: they ſomewhat incline to Mahometaniſm; for they pretend they will not drink wine, being forbidden it by their Law, yet are abominable hypocrites: for, though they wear a ſheep-skin with the wool thereon, not ſuffering any hair to be on their bodies, and in ſhew lead a chaſte life, yet I found the contrary; as you ſhall underſtand by what paſt between one of them and my ſelf. I being on ſhore with our Ships crew, I chanc'd to walk abroad, carrying with me a bottle of *Spaniſh*-wine: As I entred into a Wood, intending not to adventure too far, there came to me one of theſe *Tallapoi* or Prieſts, in the habit aforeſaid, with a horn about his neck, reſembling a Sow-gelder's but much leſs; with which, I was told, they, with the ſound thereof, uſed to convene the people,

to hear them preach. This holy Infidel eſpying me, bleſt himſelf, (as I gueſt by his geſture) and approaching near me, I imagined that he prayed for me, by the elevation of his eyes and hands: as a requital, I proffered him ſome of my wine; and having taſted thereof, lik'd it ſo well, that by ſigns, I underſtood he deſired his horn full of me: to tell you the truth, I lik'd it ſo well my ſelf, that I had no deſire to part with one drop more of it; but his importunities ſo far prevailed, that I granted his requeſt; which having obtained, he made no more ado, but drank it off, making but one gulp thereof; a thing contrary to the ſtrictneſs of his profeſſion. After this, he ſeemed to bleſs me, and ſo departed. It was but a little while, before he again preſented himſelf to my view; and beckoning to me, I followed him: coming cloſe up to him, he pointed with his finger to a place, where covertly I eſpy'd three Maidens (as I ſuppoſed) to whom he by ſigns perſwaded me to go. Sitting down amongſt them, they entertained me with as much civility as they were endued withall, and courted me after their amorous faſhion. One of theſe was the handſomeſt that I have ſeen in thoſe parts; though not to be compared, for form of face, with the homelieſt Kitchin-ſtuff-wench in *London*. I dallied with her ſo long, till that luſt conquer'd my fancy; attempting ſomething, and being in a fair way to it, this *Satyr-Goat-Devil*, (I cannot invent a name bad enough to call him by) preſently falls down upon us; and taking me thus unawares, lying on my belly, I was not able to help my ſelf, that he had like to have performed his buſineſs; and queſtionleſs had effected it, but that the two Maidens ſtanding by (no wayes aſhamed

at

at this most shameful sight) assisted me, pulling him off. I presently started up, and seized him; and tripping up his heels, I laid him on his back: having so done, I bound him; then taking out my knife, I could not find in my heart to spare him one inch; and that he might not have any witnesses left of what was done, I took away his testicles too. The three young Girles fled, fearing my rage and revenge might have extended to them: And fearing my self, that they would give information of what I had done, I fled too to my Ships-Comerades; and giving them account of what had happened, we all judg'd it the safest way to go aboard; and so we did, with all expedition possible.

CHAP. XLVI.

From hence he ſails to Do-Cerne, *ſo called by the* Portugals; *who* Adam-*like, give* (*or, as I may ſay, take too much liberty*) *in impoſing names on all new places, and things. By the* Hollanders, *it is called* Mauritius. *Its general Deſcription.*

DO-*Cerne* or *Mauritius*, is an Iſle ſituate within the torrid Zone, cloſe by the Tropick of *Capricorn*; but it is very uncertain unto what part of the world it belongs, participating both of *America*, and bending towards the *Aſiatick* Seas, from *India* to *Java*. This Iſle aboundeth with what the uſe of man ſhall require. The landing looking out at Sea, is Mountainous: the circuit of this Iſland is about an hundred miles; it procreates an healthy and nouriſhing air; the great quantity of ever-flouriſhing and fragrant trees, doth no leſs lenifie the burning heat, when the Sun enters into *Capricorn*, as helped by the ſweet mollifying breath of the North-weſt winde, when *Sol* again adheres to *Cancer*. Now as the temperature of that body is beſt compoſed, that participates indifferently of all the Elements, which either ſuper-abounding or wanting, begets defect; What then is the temperature of this place, which is bleſt with, and in all, and abortive innone? Water is here very plentiful, drilling it ſelf from the high rocks, and trickling down into the valleys, ſpreads it ſelf into various Meanders, till thoſe ſweet and pleaſant

waters

waters diſembogue themſelves into the lap of the ſalt Ocean. There is ſo great a quantity of wood, that we could hardly procure paſſage. But of thoſe many various Trees, we found none ſo beneficial to us, as the *Palmeto:* this Tree is long, ſtreight, and very ſoft, having neither leaves, boughs, nor branches, ſave at the top, whereon there is a ſoft pith, wherein conſiſts the ſole vegetative of that Tree; which cut out, the *Palmeto* in a very ſhort time expires. Its taſte is much like a kernel of an Hazel-nut; boyled, it is like Cabbage. But the chiefeſt commodity that this Tree produceth, is the wine which iſſueth from it, pleaſant, and as nouriſhing as Muskadine or Alligant. Thus we procured ſome thereof; coming where two or three grew together, with an augure we bored ſome ſmall holes in each, which immediately the liquor filled; then with a ſmall cane or quill we ſuckt the wine out of one Tree; then we went to another, and from that to the third: by that time we had drained the laſt, the holes in the two former were full again. This courſe we followed ſo ſmartly, that in leſs than an hour, three of us were ſo drunk (whereof I was none of the ſobereſt) that had not theſe Trees been neer the ſhore, for ought I know, by the morning we might have feaſted the wilde beaſts. Divers other trees there be, ſtrong both in ſhape and nature; one whereof (meerly out of curioſity) I muſt needs taſte, which for half an hour ſo bit or ſtung my tongue, as if I had had my mouth full of Vitriol, or ſpirit of Salt. It is a comely tree to look on, but brings forth not any thing that is good: this Tree is in a manner naked too, and the body thereof as ſoft and penetrable, as new Cheeſe: the form of the Tree,

its

its uſeleſneſs, with that hidden ſting it carries in it together with its ſoftneſs; the luſt of which, invite' me to cut theſe lines therein; which my knife as eaſily performed, as to write a mans name with a ſtick on the ſand. The lines were theſe:

Th' art like a Woman, but thou want'ſt her breath;
Who's fair, but fruitleſs, and will ſting to death
If taſted: would I could blaſt thee with my curſe,
Since woman thou art like, for nothing's worſe.

There is another Tree, which beareth a cod full of ſharp prickles, wherein lies hid a round fruit, in form of a Doves-egg; crack it, and therein contain'd you ſhall finde a kernel, pleaſant in taſte, but poyſonous in its operation. My ſweet tooth long'd for a taſte, and being very toothſome I did eat ſeveral; but it was not long ere my guts were all in an uproar, and were reſolved in this mutiny, could they have found way, to charge my mouth with high treaſon, againſt the reſt of my Members; but they were at laſt content only to diſcharge their fury through the Poſtern of their Microcoſm; which they did ſo furiouſly, that I was much afraid, my guts having ſpent all their ſhot, they would have marcht out after. I had (in plain Engliſh) in leſs than ſix hours ſixty ſtools, beſides purging upwards; and had not we had a very skilful Dr. Chyrurgeon of our Ship, I had unavoidably periſht. Nature in this Iſland ſhew'd her prodigality of water and wood, correſponding alſo in every thing elſe a fruitful Mother labours to be excellent in. Here ſhe ſeems to boaſt, not only in the variety of feather'd creatures, but in the rareneſs of that variety, which

ſhould

ſhould I run over but briefly, the ſubject is ſo large, that by ſome I cannot but be thought too tedious. However, I ſhall lightly touch thereon. Here, and here only is generated the *Dodo*; for rareneſs of ſhape contending with the *Arabian Phœnix*; her body is round and very fat, the leaſt whereof, commonly weighs above twenty pound: They pleaſe the ſight more than the appetite, for their fleſh is of no nouriſhment, and very offenſive to the ſtomach. By her viſage (darting forth melancholy) ſhe ſeems to be ſenſible of that injury Nature hath done her, in framing ſo great a body, and yet uſeleſs, but to pleaſe the eye; committing its guidance to complemental wings (for ſo I'm forc'd to call them) ſince they are ſo ſmall and impotent, that they only ſerve to prove her an off-ſpring of the winged Tribe. Here are Bats alſo, as large as Gaſhawks. There is likewiſe great plenty of Fiſh: among the reſt of moſt eſpecial note, is the Cow-fiſh; the head thereof not unlike an Elephants, her eyes are ſmall, her body at full growth about three yards long, and one broad, her fins exceeding little, her fleſh (being an amphibious creature, living as well at Land, ſometimes, as in the Sea) doth taſte much like Veal. Some ſay that this Fiſh doth affect, and takes much delight in the ſight of a mans viſage. About this Iſland are flying fiſh, Dolphins, and Sharks. One of our men imprudently ſwimming one day, the weather being very hot, in our ſight a Shark came and bit off his leg, and part of his thigh, and he thereupon ſunk; we made out to ſave him, but before we came, he was drowned. Here are Tortoiſes ſo great, that they will creep with

with two mens burdens on their backs; but their pace is ſo ſlow, that they would make but ill Porters, going not above ten yards in two hours, when they make their greateſt ſpeed. The birds here are ſo unaccuſtomed to frights, that I have ſhot five or ſix times amongſt a flock, letting the dead ſtill lie, and not one of the ſurviving did ſo much as offer to flie. The Goats here have more of the Politician in them; for they ſeldom feed or reſt themſelves, but they ſet out their ſentinels.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLVII.

Hence he ſailed for Bantam; *by the way he recounts the danger he had like to have ſuſtained, by aſcending a* burning Mountain.

WEighing Anchor, we ſteer'd our courſe for *Bantam*; but being much ſtraitned by the way, for want of freſh water, we were compell'd to make up to the firſt Land we deſcry'd. Though the darkneſs of the night blinded our eyes from ſuch diſcoveries, yet flames of fire not far diſtant from us, gave us perfect intelligence that Land was not far off. That night we caſt Anchor, fearing we might run foul of ſome Rock or ſhelf: In the morning we ſaw a large track of Land before us, not knowing what place it ſhould be. Our Captain commanded the Long-boat to be man'd out, to procure water, if any good were there: amongſt the reſt, I went for one; for I was very greedy to obſerve novelties. Coming on ſhore, and ſeeing this Hill now and than belch out flames, by my perſwaſions I made my fellows forget for a time their duty or errand they came about, to make ſome inquiſition into this *miracle* of Nature. Whereupon we all reſolved unanimouſly to aſcend the Hill, and with much difficulty we came ſo nigh the top, that we heard a moſt hideous noiſe proceeding from the Concave thereof: ſo terrible it was, that we now began to condemn our raſh attempt, and ſtood at a convenient diſtance, judging it the only *medium* of our ſafety. Whilſt we were thus in a *delirium*, not knowing

ing what was the beſt to be done; the Mountain was inſtantly poſſeſt with an *Ague-fit*, and afterwards vomiting up ſmoak and ſtones into the Air (which afterwards fell down in a ſhower upon our heads) we thought we could not eſcape without a miracle: and whilſt we were all ſtriving which way, with greateſt expedition, we might eſchew the danger, there roſe in the midſt of us ſuch an heap of earth, aſhes, and fire, with ſuch kinde of combuſtible matter, as that we all ſeem'd as ſo many *moveable burning Beacons*, and without any thoughts of helping each other, every one endeavoured to ſecure himſelf. And although I was the laſt in the company, yet in this expedition it was much available to me; for my companions making more haſte than good ſpeed, tumbling down the Hill before me, fell ſeveral of them together; which *blocks* lying in my way, obſtructed my paſſage, and ſo ſav'd the breaking of my neck, which otherwiſe would have been inevitable. In this prodigious conflict, moſt of us loſt the hair of our heads, not without receiving ſeveral *batteries* upon the *Out-works* of our bodies. At firſt ſight we were much afraid; but the conſequence made it appear, we were not more afraid than hurt. We made a ſhift to crawl down the reſt of the way; and having fixt our unadviſed feet on the bottom of the Mountain, we reſolv'd we would never again pay ſo dearly for our curioſity, but forthwith went in ſearch of ſome Spring, that might ſerve as well to quench our cloaths, as our thirſt. What we ſought for we quickly found; and ſo filling our empty Cask, we made what haſte we could aborad. The Captain and the reſt ſtood amaz'd to ſee us look ſo ghaſtly, and were very impatient to know

know what was the matter with us; we told them ſuccinctly what had happened, and what great dangers we underwent: inſtead of pitying us, they only laught at us for being ſuch adventurous fools. Having thus furniſhed our ſelves with what we wanted, we ſet ſail again for *Bantum*; where we ſafely arriv'd in a ſhort time.

CHAP.

CHAP. XLVIII.

Going aſhore to Bantam, *and obſerving the Merchants what they did, taking up Goods upon credit (as it is uſual in thoſe parts) till the ſhip is ready to ſet ſail, he by a ſtratagem turns Merchant too, and cheats a* Bannyan, *or* China-*Merchant.*

AS ſoon as we came into the Harbour before *Bantam*, we preſently man'd out our Long-boat, and went aſhore to acquaint the *Preſident* what we were, and by what authority we came thither to Traffick, being impowered by the *Eaſt-India*-Company. We were received with much demonſtrations of joy, and nobly feaſted for three dayes together. Here note, that the houſe wherein the *Preſident* dwelleth, is the receptacle for the whole Factory, each man according to his quality having a dwelling within this houſe ſuitable to his dignity; the Factors all in general taking their daily repaſt with the *Preſident*. In a weeks time I learned by obſervation the cuſtom of the Country, and manner or way of Trading, our Merchant taking up Goods daily, and ſending them abroad without giving preſent ſatisfaction; it being ſufficient that he belonged to ſuch a Ship, and therefore muſt pay before he go, otherwiſe the King will arreſt the Ship, compelling him to make reſtitution or payment. One time I met with a *Bannyan*, whom I obſerv'd to have a box full of precious ſtones: I could not ſleep for thinking how I ſhould make

make my ſelf a Partner with him. At laſt I hammer'd out this invention: I cloath'd my ſelf in *Indian*-ſilk, according to the cuſtom of the Country; and having ſo done, I diſcoloured my face, and clapt a black patch upon one of my eyes. In this equipage I addreſt my ſelf to this *Bannyan*, who preſently laid open his treaſure to my view. I was not long in chuſing what I eſteem'd as moſt valuable; and demanding of him the price, we agreed he ſhould have either ſo many pieces of Engliſh gold within two dayes, or elſe take his choice of what commodities I had aboard. We made a ſhift to underſtand each others broken expreſſions; and he without the leaſt ſuſpicion of my treachery, delivered his ſtones into my hands. Taking off my diſguiſe, I went inſtantly aboard, and hid what I had cheated the *Bannyan* of (as I might eaſily do for the ſmallneſs of its bulk) in the Hold of our Ship, reſolving not to go aſhore yet awhile. The day of payment being come, and the *Bannyan* no where finding me on Land, came aboard of our Ship, where by ſignes he made known to our Captain his errand; That a Merchant belonging to his Ship had bought commodities of him, and promiſed to pay him on that day. Our Captain reply'd, That he verily believed he was miſtaken (as knowing what commodities the Merchants belonging properly to the Ship had bought) and therefore told him he muſt make inquiry elſewhere for ſatisfaction. The *Bannyan* ſtill perſiſted, alleadging he was not miſtaken, and that he was confident if he might have a ſight of all the men, he could out of them ſelect the concern'd perſon. So wary I was of being diſcovered, that I acquainted not one ſoul with my project: for had I committed this ſecret to any,

(though ever so dear a friend) it had been mine no longer; neither could I have promised to my self safety. Hereupon the Captain ordered us to be all call'd aloft: which was speedily performed. He went all round the company, viewing every man particularly, and very heedfully. At last he came to me, and there made a stand, (which had like to have made my heart start out of my breast:) he lookt upon me on this side, and on the other side; and to say truly, on every side: and having thorowly eyed me, he ran to our Captain, saying, That should be the man (pointing to me) but that he is a *white man*, and hath *two sees* (*id est*) two eyes. Whereupon I was strictly examined: but for all his sifting me, I would not let drop any thing of a Confession, that should convict me of guilt; but with lifting up hands and eyes to Heaven, I utterly denyed that ere I saw this man, or ever had any dealing with him. I had now forgot what promises and vows I made to Heaven, (when in *Newgate*, and sentenced to be hang'd at *Tyburn*) what a serious, pious, and honest life I would lead, if I escaped that eminent danger the concerns of this life and that to come were then in. Herein I see the old Proverb verified:

Quo semel est imbuta recens servabit odorem
Testa diu, &c.------

That Cask will savour of that liquor still,
With which at first the Cask a man did fill.

Or according to that thred-bare expression so commonly used:

Naturam

Naturam expellas furâ, licet usque recurret.

Though man should stop his Nature from its course,
It will o'reflow again with greater force.

In short, the *Bannyan*, since he could not say positively I was the man, was dismist, not without a solemn vow he would be revenged of us all in general; and I clear'd of the Indictment.

CHAP. XLIX.

The next going aſhore of the Sea-men, this Bannyan *(for the injury was done him) cauſed a* Running a Muck, *that is, he inſtigated a great many people to kill all they met of that ſhip. The loſs of ſeveral men thereupon: but he is out of danger, having cunningly kept himſelf aboard that time. He afterwards had like to have been killed by a* Creaſe *the* Bannyan *had hired for that purpoſe. His enemies being deſtroyed, he marrieth an* Indian Punce-woman.

THe next day, a great many of our men went aſhore; and going into *China-row*, (a ſtreet ſo called in *Bantam*) to drink Punce and Tea, a great crew of Indians and Chineſes (headed by this *Bannyan*) fell upon them, killing whom they could, not directing their revenge upon any particular perſon, (which they call a *Muck*:) ſo hot and ſharp was this conflict, that many were kill'd on both ſides, but more wounded. This accident alarm'd the whole Town, but moſt eſpecially the Engliſh there reſident: but at laſt, with much ado, this grand uproar was calmed. It was my good fortune, that I was not then among them, otherwiſe I might have been made a ſacrifice among the reſt of my fellows. But I was forewarn'd, having been pre-inform'd that ſuch broyls are uſual upon ſuch occaſions; wherefore I kept my ſelf out of harms way for that time.

But

But not long after, thinking their malice was blown over, I went aſhore; and walking with others of our Boats-crew in the ſame *Row*, (where moſt of our men were us'd to reſort, becauſe of the Liquor that was there to be had, and a Whore to boot) a fellow came to me, with this *Bannyan* I cheated, and both of them with *Creaſes*, (a kinde of Dagger of about a foot and half long) would have ſtab'd me, had not my friends prevented them, by ſtriking up their heels, and afterwards with their own *Creaſes* ſtab'd them to the heart. After this, we could walk very quietly without any diſturbance, going any where without any danger.

Being very hot there, our uſual paſtime was to go up a little ſmall River (joyning to the Town) four or five miles to waſh our ſelves: the trees ſo covered it over like an Arbor, that the beams of the Sun could not penetrate it; by which means it was fine and cool, which very much refreſht our parched bodies. I never came aſhore, but I drank very immoderately of *Punce*, *Rack*, *Tea*, &c. which was brought up in great China-Jugs holding at leaſt two Quarts: with every ſuch Jug there was brought in a Diſh of Sweet-meats, not of one ſort, but variety, and excellent good; for which we paid a ſhilling Engliſh: and if you call'd for another Jug, you paid no more, unleſs a Diſh uſher'd it in.

One houſe eſpecially I much frequented, for the Indian womans ſake that kept it: for though ſhe was black, or rather tawny, yet ſhe was well-featur'd and well-form'd, having long black hair (when ſhe unty'd the treſſes) hanging down to her legs. She from the firſt ſhewed me as much kindneſs as could be

expected from that lump of Barbariſm: and I could diſcern her inclinations, (in the ſame manner as a man may from beaſts, when they are prone to Generation) but yet it went againſt my ſtomach to yield to her motions. However, ſhe continued her love to me, not letting me pay for any thing I call'd for: and when there was no neceſſity of being aboard, ſhe would in a manner make me lie in her houſe, (which, as their houſes commonly are, had but one ſtory:) the beds they uſe are a kind of Quilt, hard; for were they ſoft, the hotneſs of the Climate would cauſe them to be very deſtructive to mans body, even melting his very reins. Gold and Jewels ſhe had great quantity, with an houſe richly furniſhed after the Indian faſhion. For this conſideration, I perſwaded my ſelf to marry her; and with ſeveral arguments alleadged, I gained ſo much conqueſt over my ſelf, that I could kiſs her without diſgorging my ſelf: and by accuſtoming my ſelf to her company, methought I began to take ſome delight in it. By degrees, intereſt ſo over-power'd me, that I reſolv'd to marry her. Thus many (nay moſt) for Money, ſtick not to give themſelves to the Devil. Having one night (lying there) ſeriouſly conſidered of my reſolution, and liking it indifferent well, I fell aſleep; but wonder'd when I awaked, to ſee a thing lie by me *all black*, as if ſhe had had a *Moruning-ſmock* on. It ſeems ſhe could hold out no longer: *I* pretended to flee from her; but ſhe held me faſt in her arms, uſing what rhetorick ſhe could to perſwade me to the contrary. *I* ask'd her what ſhe meant. She told me in a little broken Engliſh ſhe had got, that ſhe would *Money me*; marry me, ſhe meant: *I*, Money me, ſaid *I*, that

that *I* like well; but without it, let the Devil have married her for me. ~~*I ask'd her several questions,*~~ to which she gave me satisfaction; and enjoyn'd her several things, which she greedily condescended to: whereupon *I* gave her the first-fruits of her desires. But ere *I* go farther, take something of my Ryming fancie with you.

CHAP. L.

He deſcants on his Marrying, and lying with an Indian-Black: Gives wholſome advice to others; and concludes for this time.

AT the firſt ſight, her head ſeem'd in a Caſe,
Or that a Vizard-mask *had hid her face,*
Or that ſhe was ſome Fiend *from hell had ſtole,*
Having for luſt been burnt *there to a* cole.
I could not tell what this foul thing ſhould be:
A Succubus *it did appear to me;*
A damn'd black *ſoul, that was by heaven ſent*
To make me of my blacker *crimes repent.*
I ſtarted from her, being much amaz'd:
The more I was afraid, the more I gaz'd.
Then ſhe aroſe, and caught me in her arm;
Such ſoft fleſh ſure intended me no harm.
'Twas time to roar, ſince that I could not tell,
But that I was encircled (*now*) *by* Hell.
Stay, ſtay, (*ſaid ſhe*) *I am no* helliſh fiend;
I'm fleſh and blood, and am thy loving friend:
If my complexion do not pleaſe thy minde,
Then cloſe thine eyes, yet love: Thus love is blinde.
I underſtood her tongue, and ſtreight did ſwear
That I would baniſh this my cauſleſs fear;
And ſo betook my ſelf unto the Rug
On which we lay, and after many a Tug,
I plighted faith *with this kinde* infidel;
But what we did, my modeſt tongue won't tell.
So ſoft and ſmoothe ſhe was, my eyes being ſhut,
I thought I ſhooting *was at* Venus *But;*

I would

I would at any time (might I but chuſe)
The faireſt White *for this ſame* Black *refuſe.*
But miſchief on't, let me ſhoot *e'er ſo right,*
It can't be ſaid that I did hit the White.

Intereſt ſo blinded my Reaſon, that I went inſtantly to my Captain, and gave him information of my proceedings, deſiring his conſent in the marrying this Indian, alleadging how advantagious it would be to me. He granted my requeſt, upon my earneſt importunity; and being diſmiſt from his ſervice, we were married according to the Ceremonies of the Church by an Engliſh Prieſt, ſhe renouncing her Paganiſm. What money was got by my wifes Trade, I laid out in ſuch Commodities the Country afforded, as Callico's, Pepper, Indico, Green-Ginger, *&c.* and ſold them immediately to the Ships lying in the Harbour, doubling what I laid out: ſo that in a ſhort time I found my ſtock to increaſe beyond expectation. Such ſatisfaction my Black received from me, that ſhe thought ſhe could not do enough to pleaſe me. I was an abſolute Monarch in my family; ſhe and her ſervants willingly condeſcending to be my vaſſals: yet though I thus enjoy'd the prerogative of an huſband, yet I did not Lord it too much; which won ſo much upon my wifes affections, and thoſe that were concern'd with her, that aſſoon as I deſired any thing, it was immediately performed, with much alacrity and expedition.

I fancy'd my life to be now as happy as the world could make it, having plenty of every thing, and not control'd by the fooliſh ſelf-will of an obſtinate woman. I confeſs it was at firſt a great regret to my ſpirit,

rit, to lie by a woman ſo contrary to my own complexion: but Cuſtom made her become in proceſs of time as lovely in my eye, as if ſhe had been the compleateſt European beauty. *I* now again conſidered how he muſt live, that intends to live well; and upon that conſideration, concluded upon this reſolution, Not to neglect my duty to Heaven, my Self, or Neighbour: for he that fails in any of theſe, falls ſhort in making his life commendable. For our Selves, we need Order; for our Neighbour, Charity; and for the Deity, Reverence and Humility. Theſe three duties are ſo concatenated, that he which liveth orderly, cannot but be acceptable to his Maker and the World. Nothing jars the worlds harmony more, than men that break their ranks; and nothing renders Man more contemned and hated, than he whoſe actions only tend to irregularity. One turbulent ſpirit will even diſſentiate the calmeſt Kingdom: ſo did my paſt unruly and diſordered life ruine my ſelf, as well as many families. *I* once had the happineſs to ſee a King ſit in Parliament, with his Nobles about him; and ſince revolving in my minde the comlineſs of that well-order'd ſight, *I* have thought within my ſelf how mad he would appear, that ſhould wildly dance out of his room. Such is man when he ſpurns at the Law he liveth under; and ſuch was *I*, that could not be contain'd within my due limits, living like the Drone on others labours; taking no pains, but onely making a humming noiſe in the world, till Juſtice feiz'd me for a wandring, idle, and hurtful vagabond, (an *ignavum pecus*) and ſo had like to have thruſt me out of the world, the Hive of induſtrious Bees.

Ill

Ill company at firſt miſled me, and it is to be feared by my example others have been miſled. For he that giveth himſelf leave to tranſgreſs, he muſt needs put others out of the way. Experience giveth us to underſtand, that he which firſt diſorders himſelf, troubles all the company. Would every man keep his own life, what a concord in Muſick would every family be! It ſhall be my own endeavour to do this, and my cordial advice to others to do the like. Doubtleſs he that performeth his duty to Heaven, ſhall finde ſuch a peace within, that ſhall fit him for whatſoever falls. He ſhall not fear Himſelf, becauſe he knoweth his courſe is order: he ſhall not fear the World, becauſe he knoweth he hath done nothing that hath anger'd it: he ſhall not be afraid of Heaven; for he knoweth he ſhall there finde the favour of a ſervant, nay more, a Son, and be protected againſt the malice of Hell.

I know I ſhall be lookt on no otherwiſe than an Hypocrite; neither will the world believe my reformation real, ſince *I* have lived ſo notoriouſly and looſly. Let a man do well an hundred times, it may be he ſhall for a ſhort time be remembred and applauded; whereas if he doth evilly but once, he ſhall be ever condemned, and never forgot. However, let me live well, and *I* care not though the world ſhould flout my innocence, and call me diſſembler: it is no matter if *I* ſuffer the worſt of cenſorious reproaches, ſo that *I* get to Heaven at laſt: to the attaining of which, the beſt counſel *I* can give my ſelf and others is, *Bene vive, ordinabiliter tibi, ſociabiliter Proximo, & himiliter Deo*: Live well, orderly to thy ſelf, ſociably to thy Neighbour, and humbly to thy Maker.

Take

Take this as wholeſome advice, though from an ill liver, which hath been in part diſcovered in the foregoing Diſcourſe; wherein I have endeavoured, by drawing up a Liſt of my own evil actions, to frighten others from the commiſſion of the like. For as there is no company ſo ſavagely bad, but a wiſe man may from it learn ſomething to make himſelf better: ſo there is no Book ſo poorly furniſhed, out of which a man may not gather ſomething for his benefit. Herein I have not minded ſo much words, as the matter; aiming at nothing more, than how I might compleatly limn Vice in her proper ugly ſhape: having done that, I have done what I intended, The reformation of others by my wicked example. For Vice is of ſuch a Toady complexion, ſo ill ſhap'd and deform'd, that ſhe cannot chuſe but teach the ſoul to hate; ſo loathſome when ſhe is ſeen in her own naſty dreſs, that we cannot look upon her but with deteſtation and horrour. Vice was cunning and curiouſly painted when I fell into her ſcabbed embraces; neither could I have ever known her foulneſs and rotteneſs, had I not tried whether her (ſeeming) fairneſs and ſoundneſs were real. Believe me, ſhe is no ways that ſhe appears to be; therefore be not deluded by her: but let my Life be to the Reader, as a friend fallen into a pit, that gives warning to another to avoid the danger. So admirably hath Providence diſpoſed of the wayes of man, that even the ſight of Vice in others, is like a Warning-arrow ſhot for us to take heed. Vice uſually in her greateſt bravery, publiſheth her ſelf fooliſhly, thinking thereby to procure a Train; and then it is, that the ſecret working of an Eternally bleſſed Eſſence makes

makes her turn her weapons againſt her ſelf, and ſtrongly plead for her implacable adverſary Vertue. We are frequently wrought to good by contraries; and foul acts keep Vertue from the charms of Vice. An ancient Poet writ well to this purpoſe, thus:

------- Inſuevit Pater optimus hoc me,
Ut fugerem exemplis vitiorum quæq; notando.
Quum me hortaretur parcè, frugaliter, atq;
Viverem uti contentus ea, quod mi ipſe paraſſet:
Nonne vides Albi ut malè vivat filius? utq;
Barrus inops? Magnum documentum ne patriam rem
Perdere quis vellit. A turpi Meretricis amore
Quum deterreret, Sectani diſſimilis ſis.
------ Sic me
Formabat puerum dictis.-----

------Thus my beſt father taught
Me to flee Vice, by noting thoſe were naught.
When he would charge me, Thrive, and ſparing be,
Content with what he had prepar'd for me;
Seeſt not how ill young *Albus* lives? how low
Poor *Barrus?* Sure, a weighty *Item* how
One ſpent his means. And when he meant to ſtrike
A hate to Whores, To *Sectan* be not like.
------Thus me a childe
He with his precepts faſhion'd.-----

There is no better way to correct faults in our ſelves, than by obſerving how uncomely they appear in others. After a fit of drunkenneſs, my conſcience would uſually accuſe me, and many times, after conviction, would paſs ſo ſevere a ſentence of condemnation

nation on me, that my own hands have oftentimes been like to prove my Executioners. Conſidering within my ſelf what ſhould be the cauſe of this trouble and ſelf-loathing, *I* found it proceeded from no other reaſon than the obſervation of others in the like beaſtly condition, and how noiſome it hath rendred them to all. The firſt thing that made me abhor a Cholerick paſſion, and a ſawcy pride in my ſelf, (of which *I* was too guilty) was the ſeeing how ridiculous and contemptible they rendred thoſe that are infeſted with them. Beſides, thoſe that are thorowly experienc'd in Navigation, do as well know the coaſts as the Ocean; as well the ſands, the ſhallows, and the rocks, as the ſecured depths in the moſt dangerleſs channel: ſo *I* think thoſe that would arrive to as much perfection as they are capable of enjoying here, muſt as well know bad, that they may abtrude or ſhun it; as the good, that they may embrace it. And this knowledge we can neither have ſo cheap, nor ſo certain, as by ſeeing it in others: for under a Crown you may buy the whole experience of a mans Life, (as of mine) which coſt ſome thouſands; though me no more hundreds than what *I* borrowed of the world, having of mine own nothing originally. *If* we could paſs the world without meeting Vice, then the knowledge of Vertue onely were ſufficient: but it is impoſſible to live, and not encounter her. Vice is as a god in this world: for as ſhe ruleth almoſt incontrollably, ſo ſhe aſſumes to her ſelf ubiquity: we cannot go any where, but that ſhe preſents her ſelf to the eye, *&c.* If any be unwittingly caſt thereon, let him obſerve, for his own more ſafe direction. He is happy, that makes another mans vices ſteps for him to climb

to

to his eternal reſt by. The wiſe Phyſician makes poyſon medicinable; and even the Mud of the world, by the induſtrious (yet ingrateful) *Hollander*, is turned to an uſeful fuel.

If (Reader) then thou lightſt here on any thing that is bad, by conſidering the ſordid ſtains, either correct thoſe faults thou haſt, or ſhun thoſe thou mightſt have. That Mariner which hath Sea-room, can make any wind almoſt ſerve to ſet him forward in his wiſhed voyage: ſo may a wiſe man take any advantage to ſet himſelf forward to the haven of Vertue. Man, aſſoon as created, had two great ſuiters for his life and ſoul; the one Vertue, and the other Vice: Virtue came in this manner, and thus attended; Truth ran before her naked, yet couragious; after her followed Labour, Cold, Hunger, Thirſt, Care and Vigilance; theſe poorly arayed, as looking upon it unſeemly to go finer than their Miſtreſs, who was plainly and meanly clad, yet cleanly: yet her countenance ſhew'd ſuch a ſelf-perfection, that ſhe might very well emblem whatſoever Omnipotencie could make moſt rare. Modeſt ſhe was, and ſo lovely, that whoſoever lookt on her face ſtedfaſtly, could not but inſoul himſelf in her. After her followed Content, enricht with Jewels, and overſpread with Perfumes, carrying with her all the treaſure and maſſie riches of the world. Then came Joy, with all eſſential pleaſures: next, Honour, with all the ancient Orders of Nobility, Scepters, Thrones, and Crowns Imperial. Laſtly, Glory, whoſe brightneſs was ſuch, (which ſhe ſhook from her Sunny treſſes) that it dazled the eyes of her beholders, ſo that they could never truly deſcribe her. In the rear came Eternity caſting a ring

about

about them, which like a ſtrong Inchantment made them ever the ſame. Vice ſtrove not to be behind-hand with Vertue; wherefore ſhe ſets out too, and in this form: Her pre-curſor or fore-runner was Lying, a painted houſwife, of a ſmooth, inſinuating, and deluding tongue, gaudily clad all in changeable; but under her veſtments ſhe was full of ſcabs and loathſome ulcers. Her words ſeem'd exceeding pleaſant; promiſing to all ſhe met whatſoever could be wiſht for, in the behalf of her Miſtreſs Vice. On this hypocritical Quean Wit waited: next him, a Conceited fellow, and one that over-ſwayed the Fancie of man with his pretty tricks and gambals. Sloth and Luxury followed theſe, ſo full, that they were then ready to be choaked with their own fat. After theſe, followed ſome Impoſtors, to perſonate Content, Joy, and Honour, in all their wealth and Royal dignities. Cloſe after theſe, Vice came her ſelf, ſumptuouſly apparel'd, but yet a naſty ſurfeited ſlut; her breath being ſo infectious, that he which kiſs'd her was ſure to periſh. After her followed ſuddenly Guilt, Horrour, Shame, Loſs, Want, Sorrow, Torment; and theſe were Charmed with Eternity's Ring, as the former. And thus they wooed fond Man, who taken with the ſubtil cozenages of Vice, yielded to lie with her; whereby he had his Nature ſo empoyſoned, that his ſeed was all viciated and contaminated; and his corruption even to this day is ſtill convey'd to his undone poſterity. It is mans folly, onely to look on the fore-runners of Vertue, which are very poor, as Cold, Hunger, Thirſt, *&c.* but not to conſider her glorious attendants that follow after, as Content, Joy, Honour and Glory. We fancy Vice for her outſide,

not

not imagining what she is when stript of all her Gauderies.

If you then intend to enjoy for your portion a Kingdom hereafter, adhere not to the allurements of Vice: for she will soon perswade you to be an unthrift, to sell your Inheritance whilest it is but in Reversion. But hearken to Vertue's counsel; she will teach you how to husband all things well, so as to become a purchaser of no less then joys eternal.

Fortunes favours oft do fade
To those that in her arms do sleep:
Shelter your selves in Vertue's shade;
She crowneth those that do her reap.
For though darkned, you may say,
When Friends fail, and Fortune frown,
Though vertue is the roughest way,
Yet proves at night a bed of Down.

THus have I given you a ſummary account of my Life, from my non-age to the meridian of my dayes. If there be any expreſſions either ſcurrilous or obſcene, my onely deſigne was to make Vice appear as ſhe is, foul, ugly, and deformed: and I Hope, he that hath ſenſe will grow wiſer by the folly that is preſented him; as Drunkards are often cured by the beaſtlineſs of others that are ſo. The ſubject would not permit to be ſerious, neither would it have been ſuitable to our merry age, being generally of *Tully*'s minde, when he ſaid, *Lectionem ſine ulla delectatione negligo*: He hated reading where no pleaſure dwelt.

As the dry light is pureſt, ſo have *I* endeavoured to make my ſlender Wit appear terſe and ſpruce, without the fulſomneſs of wanton language. *If I* have in any place tranſgreſt the bounds of modeſty by looſe expreſſions, you need not fear to be offended with their unſavoury breath, for *I* have perfumed it: but if it ſhould chance to ſtink, it is onely to drive you from my former inclination and converſation. *It* is probable *I* may be a little guilty, being not fully cured of that malady *I* lately laboured under. For as the breaking out of itch and blains ſhews the body is not clear: ſo foul and unrinſed expreſſions are the purulent exhalations of a corrupted minde ſtained with the unſeaſonedneſs of the fleſh.

If any looſe word have dropt from (the mindes beſt interpreter) my Pen, *I* would have the Reader to paſs it over regardleſs, and not, like a Toad, onely gather up the venom of a Garden; or like a Gold-finder, make it his buſineſs to dive in ſtench and excrements. However, very cautious *I* was in offending

ing any modeſt ear, (though ſometimes it could hardly be avoided, the matter in a manner requiring it) becauſe *I* look on obſcene expreſſions as the Plague on paper; and he that comes but between the ſheets, is in danger of being infected. *I* ſhall aſſure you, had *I* not more reſpected a general good, by diſplaying Vice in general, to put men out of conceit with it, *I* ſhould not have taken ſo much pains, to be both blam'd and laugh'd at, but ſhould have wrapt up in ſilence my ſhame and infamy. For in truth, this Book may bear a ſimilitude with the *Amphisbena*, a Serpent headed at either end: one biteth the vicious temper of him that reads it, and the other ſtings him that wrote it. To conclude, *I* care not though my wickedneſs and folly be ſet up as a Monument to make my infamy eternal, ſo that the reading of my Life may be any ways inſtrumental for the reformation of licentious perſons.

The Contents.

CHAP. I.

WHat his Parents were. The place of his own nativity. His miraculous escape from the hands of the Irish Rebels, his brother being at that very time murdered by the mercileſs hands of thoſe bloudy Butchers. Page 1

CHAP. II.

What waggeries he committed, being but a childe. 7

CHAP. III.

How he ran from his mother, and what courſes he ſteered in one whole years ramble. 18

CHAP. IV.

Wherein he relates what manner of people they were into whoſe ſociety he entered himſelf: Diviſion of their Tribe, Manners, Cuſtoms and Language; a ſmall Vocabulary whereof he hath inſerted. 21

CHAP. V.

How he went a begging; what rules he obſerv'd therein: what villanies he committed whileſt he profeſſed that myſterious art. 36

CHAP. VI.

Coming to London, *he enters himſelf into the ſociety of Beggers, diſtinguiſhed by theſe Titles;* Benſoakers,

Dommerars, Clapperdogeons, &c. *with a ſhort deſcription of their Manners and Cuſtoms; as alſo, a relation of a piece of theft he committed, and the execution of an unparallel'd juſtiee therean.* 42

CHAP. VII.

A Merchant ſeeing him begging, takes a fanrie to him, conducts him to his houſe, and entertains him as his ſervant. 46

CHAP. VIII.

How he came acquainted with leud and vicious Apprentices. What trade they drove together. What places and times of meeting. 49

CHAP. IX.

What devices he found out to cheat his Maſter; and what ways he had to ſpend laviſhly at unſeaſonable hours, on wine, wenches, &c. 59

The Character of a bottle of Canary. 63

CHAP. X.

How he frequented Baudy-houſes: what exploits he committed in them. The character of a Baud, a Pimp, a Whore, and a Trepan: their manner of living; with a detection of their wicked lives and conv.rſations. 73

The character of an Hector or Trepan. 80

CHAP. XI.

What a trick he ſerved his Comerade: how himſelf was trepan'd: his owne cloaths taken from him: the Baud out of preteuded pitie inveſts him with an old Petticoat and Waſtcoat: his admitance into a Boarding-School;

his

his getting many of the young Gentlewomen with childe: his discovery, and his flight. 87

CHAP. XII.

What a trick he serv'd a young man of his acquaintance whom he met withal accidentally; how he was pinched with hunger, and what ways he invented to kill it. 100

CHAP. XI. (alias XIII.)

How he had like to have been transported, being taken up by a Kidnapper, vulgarly called a Spirit. 1

CHAP. XII. (alias XIV.)

How under the pretence of begging, he stole a Cloak, and with that went to a Gaming Ordinary; what a bold adventure he made there, and the success thereof. 9

CHAP. XIII. (alias XV.)

His Master sheweth him more kindness than formerly: the ill requital he made him, by euckolding him. An accident that fell out thereupon, which produced two remarkable Stories deduced from the strength of imagination. 13

CHAP. XIV. (alias XVI.)

How his Mistress supplied him with money, even to superfluity: what ways he had to spend it. He is tempted to destruction by Correctors, *alias Clippers; and Coiners, alias* Matter-men. 25

CHAP. XVI. (alias XVII.)

He breaketh his Master (by the help of his Mistress) and so sets up for himself with that money he had unlawfully gotten in his Apprentiship, and credit besides:

what a trick he ſerved his Maſter at laſt : his Maſter and Miſtreſs ſoon after die. 31

CHAP. XVI. (alias XVIII.)

His credit becomes ſuſpected, by his exorbitant manner of living, in drinking, whoring, gaming, &c. *He thinks to ſoder up that breach by marriage : he is deceived both in her perſon and portion.* 35

CHAP. XIV. (alias XIX.)

How he was married, and what kinde of thing his wife.

CHAP. XVIII. (alias XX.)

Some obſervations concerning love and women, ſelected out of the choiceſt commentators on their nature, together with his own experimental reflections. 44

CHAP. XIX. (alias XXI.

He cheats his Creditors by knaviſh breaking, and runs away for Ireland. *He is ſhipwrackt on the Iſle of* Man. 49

CHAP. XX. (alias XXII.)

His arrival in Ireland : *he changeth his name : what tricks he ſerv'd his firſt Landlady, all his money being ſpent, and thoſe Goods and that Coyn alſo ſhipwrackt which he expected to follow him.* 53

CHAP. XXI. (alias XXIII.

He is driven to extreme neceſſity : he deſcribes what it is to be indigent ; with what he ſuffered in that condition. 57

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI. (alias XXV.)

He falling accidentally into a ſtrange houſe, endeavoureth to build a Sconce; but is fruſtrated of his intent. The old Hoſteſs pitieth him at firſt, and relieveth him, and continually after feeds him for her own peculiar diet: farther inſiſting on the miſery he then endured. 63

CHAP. XXIII. (alias XXV.)

He maketh a Ramble into the Countrey, and taketh ſome obſervations as he travelleth; and is ſoundly beaten for attempting the boarding of a ſmall Iriſh Pinnace. 68

CHAP. XXIV. (alias XXVI.)

The manner of his ſtealing an Hogshead of French-wine from the Cuſtom-houſe. 75

CHAP. XXV. (alias XXVII.)

His Landlady dieth, and ſo he is left again to live by his Wits: His Comerade is hang'd: with ſome hints of his deſperate, irreligious, and Atheiſtical tenents. 79

CHAP. XXVI. (alias XXVII.

He paſſeth for a Batchelor, and courteth ſeveral under the pretence of marrying them; by which he perſwades ſome out of their Maidenheads, others out of their money, with which he goeth for England. *At* Cheſter *he cheateth his Landlord; where having gotten all things to compleat an High-way-man, he followeth that trade. He is met with by ſome of that Gang, who intending to rob him, he diſcovereth to them his intentions, and thereupon they admit of him into their ſociety.* 83

CHAP.

The Contents.

CHAP. XXVII. (alias XXIX.)

Some inſtructions given him by the grand Maſter-thief. 87

CHAP. XXVIII.

Scouring the Road, he lights on a Farmers houſe, which he intended to rob; but deſiſts from that reſolution, falling in love with his daughter, who was exceeding beautiful; gets her with childe, under the pretence of Marriage; but afterwards refuſing it, ſhe and her parents tax him with the undoing of the young woman; whereupon he leaveth them, giving them no other ſatisfaction, than what they could gather out of a Copy of Verſes he ſent them. 94

CHAP. XXIX. (alias XXXI.

From this Farmers houſe he rides he cares not whither. On the Road he is ſtrangely ſurpris'd by a Woman-robber in mans apparel: he diſcovereth it, by unhuttoning her breeches, to ſearch for private pockets within. They two conclude a perpetual friendſhip. 103

CHAP. XXX. (alias XXXII.)

After ſupper they enter into diſcourſe, wherein ſhe giveth him a ſhort account of her life; relating how notably ſhe revenged her ſelf on her husband, for his unworthy and baſe carriage toward her. 107

CHAP. XXVI. (alias XXXII.)

He is laid up in Oxford-*Goal by his Hoſt he cheated at* Cheſter: *after ſome time he is ranſomed thence by ſome of his Comerades, Knights of the Road, they paying his debt.* 1

CHAP.

The Contents.

CHAP. XXVII. (alias XXXIV.)

He returns to his brethren the Knights of the Road, whom he findes with two or shree Gentlemen, ſtrangers: he cheats one of them of a very fair and rich Watch. 6

CHAP. XXVIII. (alias XXXVI.)

He puts a notable trick upon a Phyſician. 8

CHAP. XXIX. (alias XXXVIII.)

He falls in love with a wealthy widow, who is Poctically inclin'd: he courts her, and in a ſhort time enjoys her, and after that ingratefully leaves her, carrying away what ready money ſhe had. 11

CHAP. XXX. (alias XL.)

He comes up to London; *ſends to a particular friend, whom he could confide in, to come to him, and requeſts him to compound with his Creditors: which he did in a ſhort time; and iu a little time after, he attempts the robbing of an houſe, but is taken, and clapt up into* Newgate. *The miſeries of an impriſoned life, with the manner of his eſcape out of that priſon.* 18

CHAP. XXXI. (alias XLII.)

He and his two Comerades which he had deliver ed out of priſon with him, diſguiſed themſelves; and having been old experienced Gameſters, they taught him all the tricks on Cards by which they were wont to cheat their Cullies *or* Mouths; *and alſo how to nap, palm, or top a Dye, with all things thereunto belonging.* 30

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXII. (alias XLIV.

From hence he goes by the direction of his Comerades, to a new-fashion'd Bawdy-house: he describes it, and relates his own success. 34

CHAP. XXXIII. (alias XLVI.

He findes out his two Comerades the Gamesters; and after some consultation had, they resolved to re-assume their quondam *trade of Padding: are taken again, and committed to* Newgate.

CHAP. XXXIV. (alias XLVIII.

He much condemns the follies of his past actions; and in token of his unfeigned repentance, giveth some general instructions to his Countrey-men: first, how to know Padders on the Road, by infallible signs; with other remarks worthy the observation of any Travellers, laid down in some consequent Chapters. 44

CHAP. XXXV. (alias L.)

What is to be taken heed unto before the Traveller beginneth his Journey. 46

CHAP. XXXVI. (alias LII.)

Instructions in what manner, at what time, and what road is most safe to ride. 49

CHAP. XXXV. false printed for XXXVII.

How a man is to behave himself, if beset unawares, or surprised. 51

CHAP.

CHAP. XXXVI. false printed for XXXVIII.

Directions, if robbed, how to follow the Thieves; what way to send Heu *and* Cry *after them; how to coast, and where to finde them.* 53

CHAP. XXXVII.

Cordial advice, and infallible instructions for the Innekeeper, how to know thieves from honest guests. 54

CHAP. XXXVIII.

He receiveth sentence of Condemnation, and thereupon seriously contemplates death, and considers Eternity. 57

CHAP. XXXIX.

Being on board, he descants on his ensuing misery, and draws comfort to himself from the sufferings of others. He relateth how he was freed from his intended banishment, by a double shipwrack; the manner whereof he amply relateth. 67

CHAP. XL.

From Perimbana *a small maritine Town on the Spanish coast, on which he was cast away, he sets sail with Captain* Ferdinando Velasquez *bound to the East-Indies; but by the way meets with three Turkish Galleys, and by them is taken, miserably abused and imprisoned.* 77

CHAP. XLI.

He is brought forth into the Market-place, and there put to sale: he is bought by a Jew, a miserable avaritious man, and by a stratagem delivers himself from that Master, and is sold to a Grecian, in heart a Christian: the

the ſhip being taken, and this his new Maſter drown'd, he eſcaping to ſhore by ſwimming, is at his own liberty. 80

CHAP. XLII. (alias XLI.)

From hence he ſet ſail to Swalley-Road, *and ſo from thence coaſted till he arrived at* Delyn, *a Town that belongs to the* Malabars: *he gives an account of what he there ſaw and obſerved.* 95

CHAP. XLIII.

From Delyn *he ſailed to* Zeyloon; *with what he there obſerved.* 88

CHAP. XLIV.

From Zeyloon, *he arrived at* Syam; *and what there he ſaw and obſerved.* 100

CHAP. XLV.

From hence he ſails to Do-Cerne, *ſo called by the* Portugals; *who*, Adam-*like*, *give* (*or*, *as I may ſay*) *take too much liberty in impoſing names on all new places and things. By the* Hollanders, *it is called* Mauritius. *Its general deſcription.* 104

CHAP. XLVI.

Hence he ſailed for Bantum: *by the way he recounts the danger he had like to have ſuſtained, by aſcending a* burning Mountain. 109

CHAP. XLVII.

Going aſhore to Bantam, *and obſerving the Merchants what they did, taking up Goods upon credit* (*as it is uſual in thoſe parts*) *till the ſhip is ready to ſet ſail, he*

he by a ſtratagem turns Merchant too, and cheats a Bannyan, *or* China-*Merchant.* 112

CHAP. XLVIII.

The next going aſhore of the Sea-men, this Bannyan *(for the injury done him) cauſed a* Running a Muck; *that is, he inſtigated a great many people to kill all they met of that ſhip. The loſs of ſeveral men thereupon: he is out of danger, having cunningly kept himſelf aboard that time. He afterwards had like to have been kill'd by a* Creaſe *the* Bannyan *had hired for that purpoſe. His enemies being deſtroyed, he marrieth an* Indian Punce-woman. 116

CHAP. LXIX.

He deſcants on his marrying, and lying with an Indian Black: *Gives wholeſom advice to others, and concludes for this time.* 120

FINIS.

D X
H 1246

86971 v.1

REPRODUCED FROM THE COPY IN THE

HENRY E. HUNTINGTON LIBRARY

FOR REFERENCE ONLY. NOT FOR REPRODUCTION